# Boundedness for Vector-Valued Multilinear Singular Integral Operator on $L^{p}$ Spaces with Variable Exponent 

Jing Du, Chuangxia Huang, Lanzhe Liu


#### Abstract

In this paper, we prove the boundedness for some vector-valued multilinear singular integral operators on $L^{p}$ spaces with variable exponent by using a sharp estimate of the multilinear operators.


Mathematics subject classification: 42B20, 42B25
Keywords and phrases: Vector-valued multilinear operator, singular integral operator, BMO, variable $L^{p}$ space.

## 1 Introduction and Theorems

As the development of the Calderón-Zygmund singular integral operators and their commutators, multilinear singular integral operators have been well studied (see [4, 9, 16-19]). Let $T$ be the Calderón-Zygmund singular integral operator. In [1-3], Cohen and Gosselin studied the $L^{p}(p>1)$ boundedness of the multilinear singular integral operator $T^{A}$ defined by

$$
T^{A}(f)(x)=\int_{R^{n}} \frac{R_{m+1}(A ; x, y)}{|x-y|^{m}} K(x, y) f(y) d y
$$

where

$$
R_{m+1}(A ; x, y)=A(x)-\sum_{|\alpha| \leq m} \frac{1}{\alpha!} D^{\alpha} A(y)(x-y)^{\alpha}
$$

In [12], Hu and Yang proved a variant sharp estimate for the multilinear singular integral operators. In the last years, a theory of $L^{p}$ spaces with variable exponent has been developed because of its connections with some questions in fluid dynamics, calculus of variations, differential equations and elasticity (see $[5-8,15]$ and their references). Karlovich and Lerner have studied the boundedness of the commutators of singular integral operators on $L^{p}$ spaces with variable exponent (see [13]). In this paper, we will study the boundedness properties for some vector-valued multilinear singular integral operators on $L^{p}$ spaces with variable exponent, whose definition is the following.

Fix $\varepsilon>0$. Let $S$ and $S^{\prime}$ be Schwartz space and its dual and $T: S \rightarrow S^{\prime}$ be a linear operator. If there exists a locally integrable function $K(x, y)$ on $R^{n} \times R^{n} \backslash\{(x, y) \in$ $\left.R^{n} \times R^{n}: x=y\right\}$ such that

$$
T(f)(x)=\int_{R^{n}} K(x, y) f(y) d y
$$

[^0]for every bounded and compactly supported function $f$, where $K$ satisfies:
$$
|K(x, y)| \leq C|x-y|^{-n}
$$
and
$$
|K(y, x)-K(z, x)|+|K(x, y)-K(x, z)| \leq C|y-z|^{\varepsilon}|x-z|^{-n-\varepsilon}
$$
when $2|y-z| \leq|x-z|$. Let $m_{j}$ be positive integers $(j=1, \cdots, l), m_{1}+\cdots+m_{l}=m$ and $A_{j}$ be functions on $R^{n}(j=1, \cdots, l)$. For $1<s<\infty$, the vector-valued multilinear operator related to $T$ is defined by
$$
\left|T_{A}(f)(x)\right|_{s}=\left(\sum_{i=1}^{\infty}\left|T_{A}\left(f_{i}\right)(x)\right|^{s}\right)^{1 / s}
$$
where
$$
T_{A}\left(f_{i}\right)(x)=\int_{R^{n}} \frac{\prod_{j=1}^{l} R_{m_{j}+1}\left(A_{j} ; x, y\right)}{|x-y|^{m}} K(x, y) f_{i}(y) d y
$$
and
$$
R_{m_{j}+1}\left(A_{j} ; x, y\right)=A_{j}(x)-\sum_{|\alpha| \leq m_{j}} \frac{1}{\alpha!} D^{\alpha} A_{j}(y)(x-y)^{\alpha} .
$$

We also denote

$$
|T(f)(x)|_{s}=\left(\sum_{i=1}^{\infty}\left|T\left(f_{i}\right)(x)\right|^{s}\right)^{1 / s} \text { and }|f|_{s}=\left(\sum_{i=1}^{\infty}\left|f_{i}(x)\right|^{s}\right)^{1 / s} .
$$

Suppose that $|T|_{s}$ is weakly $\left(L^{1}, L^{1}\right)$-bounded.
Note that when $m=0,\left|T_{A}\right|_{s}$ is just the vector-valued multilinear commutator of $T$ and $A$ (see [19]). While when $m>0,\left|T_{A}\right|_{s}$ is non-trivial generalizations of the commutator. It is well known that multilinear operators are of great interest in harmonic analysis and have been studied by many authors (see [1-4, 9]). In [12], Hu and Yang proved a variant sharp estimate for the multilinear singular integral operators. In [18], Pérez and Trujillo-Gonzalez proved a sharp estimate for some multilinear commutator. The main purpose of this paper is to prove the boundedness for the vector-valued multilinear singular integral operators $\left|T_{A}\right|_{s}$ on $L^{p}$ spaces with variable exponent. To do this, we first prove a sharp inequality for the vector-valued multilinear singular integral operators.

Now, let us introduce some notations. Throughout this paper, $Q$ will denote a cube of $R^{n}$ with sides parallel to the axes. For any locally integrable function $f$ and $\delta>0$, the sharp function of $f$ is defined by

$$
f_{\delta}^{\#}(x)=\sup _{Q \ni x}\left(\frac{1}{|Q|} \int_{Q}\left|f(y)-f_{Q}\right|^{\delta} d y\right)^{1 / \delta},
$$

where, and in what follows, $f_{Q}=|Q|^{-1} \int_{Q} f(x) d x$. It is well-known that (see [11,20])

$$
f_{\delta}^{\#}(x) \approx \sup _{Q \ni x} \inf _{c \in C}\left(\frac{1}{|Q|} \int_{Q}|f(y)-c|^{\delta} d y\right)^{1 / \delta} .
$$

We write $f^{\#}=f_{\delta}^{\#}$ if $\delta=1$. We say that $f$ belongs to $B M O\left(R^{n}\right)$ if $f^{\#}$ belongs to $L^{\infty}\left(R^{n}\right)$ and define $\|f\|_{B M O}=\left\|f^{\#}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}$. Let $M$ be the Hardy-Littlewood maximal operator defined by

$$
M(f)(x)=\sup _{Q \ni x}|Q|^{-1} \int_{Q}|f(y)| d y .
$$

For $k \in N$, we denote by $M^{k}$ the operator $M$ iterated $k$ times, i.e., $M^{1}(f)(x)=$ $M(f)(x)$ and

$$
M^{k}(f)(x)=M\left(M^{k-1}(f)\right)(x) \text { when } k \geq 2 .
$$

Let $\Phi$ be a Young function and $\tilde{\Phi}$ be the complementary associated to $\Phi$. We denote the $\Phi$-average for a function $f$ by

$$
\|f\|_{\Phi, Q}=\inf \left\{\lambda>0: \frac{1}{|Q|} \int_{Q} \Phi\left(\frac{|f(y)|}{\lambda}\right) d y \leq 1\right\}
$$

and the maximal function associated to $\Phi$ by

$$
M_{\Phi}(f)(x)=\sup _{Q \ni x}\|f\|_{\Phi, Q} .
$$

The Young functions to be used in this paper are $\Phi(t)=t(1+\log t)^{r}$ and $\tilde{\Phi}(t)=$ $\exp \left(t^{1 / r}\right)$, the corresponding average and maximal functions denoted by $\|\cdot\|_{L(\log L)^{r}, Q}$, $M_{L(\log L)^{r}}$ and $\|\cdot\|_{\text {expL }}{ }^{1 / r}, Q, M_{\text {expL }} 1 / r$. Following [16-19], we know the generalized Hölder's inequality:

$$
\frac{1}{|Q|} \int_{Q}|f(y) g(y)| d y \leq\|f\|_{\Phi, Q}\|g\|_{\tilde{\Phi}, Q}
$$

and the following inequalities, for $r, r_{j} \geq 1, j=1, \cdots, l$, with $1 / r=1 / r_{1}+\cdots+1 / r_{l}$, and any $x \in R^{n}, b \in B M O\left(R^{n}\right)$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
&\|f\|_{L(\log L)^{1 / r}, Q} \leq M_{L(\log L)^{1 / r}}(f) \leq C M_{L(\log L)^{l}}(f) \leq C M^{l+1}(f), \\
&\left\|b-b_{Q}\right\|_{{\exp L^{r}, Q} \leq C\|b\|_{B M O},} \\
&\left|b_{2^{k+1} Q}-b_{2 Q}\right| \leq C k\|b\|_{B M O} .
\end{aligned}
$$

The non-increasing rearrangement of a measurable function $f$ on $R^{n}$ is defined by

$$
f^{*}(t)=\inf \left\{\lambda>0:\left|\left\{x \in R^{n}:|f(x)|>\lambda\right\}\right| \leq t\right\} \quad(0<t<\infty) .
$$

For $\lambda \in(0,1)$ and a measurable function $f$ on $R^{n}$, the local sharp maximal function of $f$ is defined by

$$
M_{\lambda}^{\#}(f)(x)=\sup _{Q \ni x} \inf _{c \in C}\left((f-c) \chi_{Q}\right)^{*}(\lambda|Q|) .
$$

Let $p: R^{n} \rightarrow[1, \infty)$ be a measurable function. Denote by $L^{p(\cdot)}\left(R^{n}\right)$ the sets of all Lebesgue measurable functions $f$ on $R^{n}$ such that $m(\lambda f, p)<\infty$ for some $\lambda=\lambda(f)>0$, where

$$
m(f, p)=\int_{R^{n}}|f(x)|^{p(x)} d x .
$$

The sets becomes Banach spaces with respect to the following norm

$$
\|f\|_{L^{p(\cdot)}}=\inf \{\lambda>0: m(f / \lambda, p) \leq 1\} .
$$

Denote by $M\left(R^{n}\right)$ the set of all measurable functions $p: R^{n} \rightarrow[1, \infty)$ such that the Hardy-Littlewood maximal operator $M$ is bounded on $L^{p(\cdot)}\left(R^{n}\right)$ and the following holds

$$
\begin{equation*}
1<p_{-}=\text {ess } \inf _{x \in R^{n}} p(x), \quad \text { ess } \sup _{x \in R^{n}} p(x)=p_{+}<\infty . \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

In recent years, the boundedness of classical operators on spaces $L^{p(\cdot)}\left(R^{n}\right)$ have attracted a great attention (see [5-8,15]). In this paper, we shall prove the following theorems.

Theorem 1. Let $1<s<\infty$ and $D^{\alpha} A_{j} \in B M O\left(R^{n}\right)$ for all $\alpha$ with $|\alpha|=m_{j}$ and $j=1, \cdots, l$. Then there exists a constant $C>0$ such that for any $f=\left\{f_{i}\right\} \in$ $L_{0}^{\infty}\left(R^{n}\right), 0<\delta<1$ and $\tilde{x} \in R^{n}$,

$$
\left(\left|T_{A}(f)\right|_{s}\right)_{\delta}^{\#}(\tilde{x}) \leq C \prod_{j=1}^{l}\left(\sum_{\left|\alpha_{j}\right|=m_{j}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{j}} A_{j}\right\|_{B M O}\right) M^{l+1}\left(|f|_{s}\right)(\tilde{x}) .
$$

Theorem 2. Let $1<s<\infty, p(\cdot) \in \mathrm{M}\left(R^{n}\right)$ and $D^{\alpha} A_{j} \in B M O\left(R^{n}\right)$ for all $\alpha$ with $|\alpha|=m_{j}$ and $j=1, \cdots, l$. Then $\left|T_{A}\right|_{s}$ is bounded on $L^{p(\cdot)}\left(R^{n}\right)$, that is

$$
\left\|\left|\left|T_{A}(f)\right|_{s}\left\|_{L^{p(\cdot)}} \leq C \prod_{j=1}^{l}\left(\sum_{\left|\alpha_{j}\right|=m_{j}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{j}} A_{j}\right\|_{B M O}\right)| ||f|_{s}\right\|_{L^{p(\cdot)}} .\right.\right.
$$

Remark 1. Let $T$ be the Calderón-Zygmund operator (see [4, 11, 20]). Then Theorem 1 and Theorem 2 hold for $T$.

## 2 Some Lemmas

We begin with some preliminary lemmas.
Lemma 1 (see [3]). Let $A$ be a function on $R^{n}$ and $D^{\alpha} A \in L^{q}\left(R^{n}\right)$ for all $\alpha$ with $|\alpha|=m$ and some $q>n$. Then

$$
\left|R_{m}(A ; x, y)\right| \leq C|x-y|^{m} \sum_{|\alpha|=m}\left(\frac{1}{|\tilde{Q}(x, y)|} \int_{\tilde{Q}(x, y)}\left|D^{\alpha} A(z)\right|^{q} d z\right)^{1 / q}
$$

where $\tilde{Q}$ is the cube centered at $x$ and having side length $5 \sqrt{n}|x-y|$.

Lemma 2 (see [11, p. 485]). Let $0<p<q<\infty$. We define that, for any function $f \geq 0$ and $1 / r=1 / p-1 / q$,

$$
\|f\|_{W L^{q}}=\sup _{\lambda>0} \lambda\left|\left\{x \in R^{n}: f(x)>\lambda\right\}\right|^{1 / q}, N_{p, q}(f)=\sup _{E}\left\|f \chi_{E}\right\|_{L^{p}} /\left\|\chi_{E}\right\|_{L^{r}}
$$

where the sup is taken for all measurable sets $E$ with $0<|E|<\infty$. Then

$$
\|f\|_{W L^{q}} \leq N_{p, q}(f) \leq(q /(q-p))^{1 / p}\|f\|_{W L^{q}}
$$

Lemma 3 (see [18]). Let $r_{j} \geq 1$ for $j=1, \cdots, l$ and we denote $1 / r=1 / r_{1}+\cdots+1 / r_{l}$. Then

$$
\frac{1}{|Q|} \int_{Q}\left|f_{1}(x) \cdots f_{l}(x) g(x)\right| d x \leq\|f\|_{{e x p p L^{r_{1}}, Q} \cdots\|f\|_{\operatorname{expL} L^{r_{l}, Q}}\|g\|_{L(\log L)^{1 / r}, Q} .}
$$

Lemma 4 (see [13]). Let $p: R^{n} \rightarrow[1, \infty)$ be a measurable function satisfying (1). Then $L_{0}^{\infty}\left(R^{n}\right)$ is dense in $L^{p(\cdot)}\left(R^{n}\right)$.

Lemma 5 (see [14]). Let $f \in L_{l o c}^{1}\left(R^{n}\right)$ and $g$ be a measurable function satisfying

$$
\left|\left\{x \in R^{n}:|g(x)|>\alpha\right\}\right|<\infty \quad \text { for all } \quad \alpha>0
$$

Then

$$
\int_{R^{n}}|f(x) g(x)| d x \leq C_{n} \int_{R^{n}} M_{\lambda_{n}}^{\#}(f)(x) M(g)(x) d x
$$

Lemma 6 (see [14]). Let $\delta>0,0<\lambda<1$ and $f \in L_{\text {loc }}^{\delta}\left(R^{n}\right)$. Then

$$
M_{\lambda}^{\#}(f)(x) \leq(1 / \lambda)^{1 / \delta} f_{\delta}^{\#}(x)
$$

Lemma 7 (see [13]). Let $p: R^{n} \rightarrow[1, \infty)$ be a measurable function satisfying (1). If $f \in L^{p(\cdot)}\left(R^{n}\right)$ and $g \in L^{p^{\prime}(\cdot)}\left(R^{n}\right)$ with $p^{\prime}(x)=p(x) /(p(x)-1)$, then $f g$ is integrable on $R^{n}$ and

$$
\int_{R^{n}}|f(x) g(x)| d x \leq C| | f\left\|_{L^{p(\cdot)}}\right\| g \|_{L^{p^{\prime}(\cdot)}}
$$

Lemma 8 (see [13]). Let $p: R^{n} \rightarrow[1, \infty)$ be a measurable function satisfying (1). Set

$$
\|f\|_{L^{p(\cdot)}}^{\prime}=\sup \left\{\int_{R^{n}}|f(x) g(x)| d x: f \in L^{p(\cdot)}\left(R^{n}\right), g \in L^{p^{\prime}(\cdot)}\left(R^{n}\right)\right\}
$$

Then $\|f\|_{L^{p(\cdot)}} \leq\|f\|_{L^{p(\cdot)}}^{\prime} \leq C\|f\|_{L^{p(\cdot)}}$.

## 3 Proof of Theorem

It suffices to prove that for $f \in C_{0}^{\infty}\left(R^{n}\right)$ and some constant $C_{0}$, the following inequality holds:

$$
\left(\frac{1}{|Q|} \int_{Q} \|\left. T_{A}(f)(x)\right|_{s}-\left.C_{0}\right|^{\delta} d x\right)^{1 / \delta} \leq C \prod_{j=1}^{l}\left(\sum_{\left|\alpha_{j}\right|=m_{j}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{j}} A_{j}\right\|_{B M O}\right) M^{l+1}\left(|f|_{s}\right)(\tilde{x})
$$

Without loss of generality, we may assume $l=2$. Fix a cube $Q=Q\left(x_{0}, d\right)$ and $\tilde{x} \in Q$. Let $\tilde{Q}=5 \sqrt{n} Q$ and $\tilde{A}_{j}(x)=A_{j}(x)-\sum_{|\alpha|=m} \frac{1}{\alpha!}\left(D^{\alpha} A_{j}\right)_{\tilde{Q}^{x}} x^{\alpha}$, then $R_{m}\left(A_{j} ; x, y\right)=$ $R_{m}\left(\tilde{A}_{j} ; x, y\right)$ and $D^{\alpha} \tilde{A}_{j}=D^{\alpha} A_{j}-\left(D^{\alpha} A_{j}\right)_{\tilde{Q}}$ for $|\alpha|=m_{j}$. We split $f=g+h=$ $\left\{g_{i}\right\}+\left\{h_{i}\right\}$ for $g_{i}=f_{i} \chi_{\tilde{Q}}$ and $h_{i}=f_{i} \chi_{R^{n} \backslash \tilde{Q}}$. Write

$$
\begin{aligned}
& T_{A}\left(f_{i}\right)(x)=\int_{R^{n}} \frac{\prod_{j=1}^{2} R_{m_{j}+1}\left(\tilde{A}_{j} ; x, y\right)}{|x-y|^{m}} K(x, y) f_{i}(y) d y \\
& =\int_{R^{n}} \frac{\prod_{j=1}^{2} R_{m_{j}+1}\left(\tilde{A}_{j} ; x, y\right)}{|x-y|^{m}} K(x, y) h_{i}(y) d y \\
& +\int_{R^{n}} \frac{\prod_{j=1}^{2} R_{m_{j}}\left(\tilde{A}_{j} ; x, y\right)}{|x-y|^{m}} K(x, y) g_{i}(y) d y \\
& -\sum_{\left|\alpha_{1}\right|=m_{1}} \frac{1}{\alpha_{1}!} \int_{R^{n}} \frac{R_{m_{2}}\left(\tilde{A}_{2} ; x, y\right)(x-y)^{\alpha_{1}}}{|x-y|^{m}} D^{\alpha_{1}} \tilde{A}_{1}(y) K(x, y) g_{i}(y) d y \\
& -\sum_{\left|\alpha_{2}\right|=m_{2}} \frac{1}{\alpha_{2}!} \int_{R^{n}} \frac{R_{m_{1}}\left(\tilde{A}_{1} ; x, y\right)(x-y)^{\alpha_{2}}}{|x-y|^{m}} D^{\alpha_{2}} \tilde{A}_{2}(y) K(x, y) g_{i}(y) d y \\
& +\sum_{\left|\alpha_{1}\right|=m_{1},\left|\alpha_{2}\right|=m_{2}} \frac{1}{\alpha_{1}!\alpha_{2}!} \int_{R^{n}} \frac{(x-y)^{\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}} D^{\alpha_{1}} \tilde{A}_{1}(y) D^{\alpha_{2}} \tilde{A}_{2}(y)}{|x-y|^{m}} K(x, y) g_{i}(y) d y
\end{aligned}
$$

then, by Minkowski' inequality,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& {\left[\left.\frac{1}{|Q|} \int_{Q}| | T_{A}(f)(x)\right|_{s}-\left.\left|T_{\tilde{A}}(h)\left(x_{0}\right)\right|_{s}\right|^{\delta} d x\right]^{1 / \delta} } \\
\leq & {\left[\frac{1}{|Q|} \int_{Q}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{\infty}\left|T_{A}\left(f_{i}\right)(x)-T_{\tilde{A}}\left(h_{i}\right)\left(x_{0}\right)\right|^{s}\right)^{\delta / s} d x\right]^{1 / \delta} } \\
\leq & {\left[\frac{C}{|Q|} \int_{Q}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{\infty}\left|\int_{R^{n}} \frac{\prod_{j=1}^{2} R_{m_{j}}\left(\tilde{A}_{j} ; x, y\right)}{|x-y|^{m}} K(x, y) g_{i}(y) d y\right|^{s}\right)^{\delta / s} d x\right]^{1 / \delta} } \\
+ & {\left[\frac { C } { | Q | } \int _ { Q } \left(\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \left\lvert\, \sum_{\left|\alpha_{1}\right|=m_{1}} \int_{R^{n}} \frac{R_{m_{2}}\left(\tilde{A}_{2} ; x, y\right)(x-y)^{\alpha_{1}}}{|x-y|^{m}}\right.\right.\right.}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left.\left.\times\left. D^{\alpha_{1}} \tilde{A}_{1}(y) K(x, y) g_{i}(y) d y\right|^{s}\right)^{\delta / s} d x\right]^{1 / \delta} \\
+ & {\left[\frac { C } { | Q | } \int _ { Q } \left(\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \left\lvert\, \sum_{\left|\alpha_{2}\right|=m_{2}} \int_{R^{n}} \frac{R_{m_{1}}\left(\tilde{A}_{1} ; x, y\right)(x-y)^{\alpha_{2}}}{|x-y|^{m}}\right.\right.\right.} \\
& \left.\left.\times\left. D^{\alpha_{2}} \tilde{A}_{2}(y) K(x, y) g_{i}(y) d y\right|^{s}\right)^{\delta / s} d x\right]^{1 / \delta} \\
+ & {\left[\frac { C } { | Q | } \int _ { Q } \left(\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \left\lvert\, \sum_{\left|\alpha_{1}\right|=m_{1},\left|\alpha_{2}\right|=m_{2}} \int_{R^{n}} \frac{(x-y)^{\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}} D^{\alpha_{1}} \tilde{A}_{1}(y) D^{\alpha_{2}} \tilde{A}_{2}(y)}{|x-y|^{m}}\right.\right.\right.} \\
& \left.\left.\times\left. K(x, y) g_{i}(y) d y\right|^{s}\right)^{\delta / s} d x\right]^{1 / \delta} \\
+ & {\left[\frac{C}{|Q|} \int_{Q}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{\infty}\left|T_{\tilde{A}}\left(h_{i}\right)(x)-T_{\tilde{A}}\left(h_{i}\right)\left(x_{0}\right)\right|^{s}\right)^{\delta / s} d x\right]^{1 / \delta} } \\
:= & I_{1}+I_{2}+I_{3}+I_{4}+I_{5} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Now, let us estimate $I_{1}, I_{2}, I_{3}, I_{4}$ and $I_{5}$, respectively. First, for $x \in Q$ and $y \in \tilde{Q}$, by Lemma 1 , we get

$$
R_{m_{j}}\left(\tilde{A}_{j} ; x, y\right) \leq C|x-y|^{m_{j}} \sum_{\left|\alpha_{j}\right|=m_{j}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{j}} A_{j}\right\|_{B M O},
$$

thus, by Lemma 2 and the weak type $(1,1)$ of $|T|_{s}$, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
I_{1} & \leq C \prod_{j=1}^{2}\left(\sum_{\left|\alpha_{j}\right|=m_{j}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{j}} A_{j}\right\|_{B M O}\right)\left(\frac{1}{|Q|} \int_{Q}|T(g)(x)|_{s}^{\delta} d x\right)^{1 / \delta} \\
& =C \prod_{j=1}^{2}\left(\sum_{\left|\alpha_{j}\right|=m_{j}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{j}} A_{j}\right\|_{B M O}\right)|Q|^{-1} \frac{\left\|\left.T(g)\right|_{s} \chi_{Q}\right\|_{L^{\delta}}}{|Q|^{1 / \delta-1}} \\
& \leq\left. C \prod_{j=1}^{2}\left(\sum_{\left|\alpha_{j}\right|=m_{j}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{j}} A_{j} \mid\right\|_{B M O}\right)|Q|^{-1}| | T(g)\right|_{s} \|_{W L^{1}} \\
& \leq C \prod_{j=1}^{2}\left(\sum_{\left|\alpha_{j}\right|=m_{j}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{j}} A_{j}\right\|_{B M O}\right)|Q|^{-1}| ||g|_{s} \|_{L^{1}} \\
& \leq C \prod_{j=1}^{2}\left(\sum_{\left|\alpha_{j}\right|=m_{j}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{j}} A_{j}\right\|_{B M O}\right) M\left(|f|_{s}\right)(\tilde{x}) .
\end{aligned}
$$

For $I_{2}$, by Lemma 2 and generalized Hölder's inequality, we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
I_{2} & \leq C \sum_{\left|\alpha_{2}\right|=m_{2}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{2}} A_{2}\right\|_{B M O} \sum_{\left|\alpha_{1}\right|=m_{1}}\left(\frac{1}{|Q|} \int_{R^{n}}\left|T\left(D^{\alpha_{1}} \tilde{A}_{1} g\right)(x)\right|_{s}^{\delta} d x\right)^{1 / \delta} \\
& \leq\left. C \sum_{\left|\alpha_{2}\right|=m_{2}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{2}} A_{2}\right\|_{B M O} \sum_{\left|\alpha_{1}\right|=m_{1}}|Q|^{-1}| | T\left(D^{\alpha_{1}} \tilde{A}_{1} g\right)(x)\right|_{s} \chi_{Q} \|_{W L^{1}}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \leq C \sum_{\left|\alpha_{2}\right|=m_{2}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{2}} A_{2}\right\|_{B M O} \sum_{\left|\alpha_{1}\right|=m_{1}} \frac{1}{|Q|} \int_{R^{n}}\left|D^{\alpha_{1}} \tilde{A}_{1}(x) \| g(x)\right|_{s} d x \\
& \leq C \sum_{\left|\alpha_{2}\right|=m_{2}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{2}} A_{2}\right\|_{B M O} \sum_{\left|\alpha_{1}\right|=m_{1}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{1}} A_{1}-\left(D^{\alpha_{1}} A_{1}\right)_{\tilde{Q}}\right\|_{e x p L, \tilde{Q}}\left|\left\|\left.f\right|_{s}\right\|_{L(l o g L), \tilde{Q}}\right. \\
& \leq C \prod_{j=1}^{2}\left(\sum_{\left|\alpha_{j}\right|=m_{j}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{j}} A_{j}\right\|_{B M O}\right) M^{2}\left(|f|_{s}\right)(\tilde{x}) .
\end{aligned}
$$

For $I_{3}$, similarly to the proof of $I_{2}$, we get

$$
I_{3} \leq C \prod_{j=1}^{2}\left(\sum_{\left|\alpha_{j}\right|=m_{j}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{j}} A_{j}\right\|_{B M O}\right) M^{2}\left(|f|_{s}\right)(\tilde{x}) .
$$

Similarly, for $I_{4}$, taking $r, r_{1}, r_{2} \geq 1$ such that $1 / r=1 / r_{1}+1 / r_{2}$, we obtain, by Lemma 3,

$$
\begin{aligned}
I_{4} & \leq C \sum_{\left|\alpha_{1}\right|=m_{1},\left|\alpha_{2}\right|=m_{2}}\left(\frac{1}{|Q|} \int_{R^{n}}\left|T\left(D^{\alpha_{1}} \tilde{A}_{1} D^{\alpha_{2}} \tilde{A}_{2} f_{1}\right)(x)\right|_{s}^{\delta} d x\right)^{1 / \delta} \\
& \leq C \sum_{\left|\alpha_{1}\right|=m_{1},\left|\alpha_{2}\right|=m_{2}}|Q|^{-1}| |\left|T\left(D^{\alpha_{1}} \tilde{A}_{1} D^{\alpha_{2}} \tilde{A}_{2} g\right)\right|_{s} \chi_{Q} \|_{W L^{1}} \\
& \leq C \sum_{\left|\alpha_{1}\right|=m_{1},\left|\alpha_{2}\right|=m_{2}} \frac{1}{|Q|} \int_{R^{n}}\left|D^{\alpha_{1}} \tilde{A}_{1}(x) D^{\alpha_{2}} \tilde{A}_{2}(x)\right||g(x)|_{s} d x \\
& \leq C \sum_{\left|\alpha_{1}\right|=m_{1},\left|\alpha_{2}\right|=m_{2}} \prod_{j=1}^{2}\left\|D^{\alpha_{j}} A_{j}-\left(D^{\alpha_{j}} A_{j}\right)_{\tilde{Q}}\right\|_{e x p L^{r_{j}, \tilde{Q}}} \cdot\left|\left\|\left.f\right|_{s}\right\|_{L(\operatorname{logL})^{1 / r}, \tilde{Q}}\right. \\
& \leq C \prod_{j=1}^{2}\left(\sum_{\left|\alpha_{j}\right|=m_{j}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{j}} A_{j}\right\|_{B M O}\right) M^{3}\left(|f|_{s}\right)(\tilde{x}) .
\end{aligned}
$$

For $I_{5}$, we write

$$
\begin{aligned}
& T_{\tilde{A}}\left(h_{i}\right)(x)-T_{\tilde{A}}\left(h_{i}\right)\left(x_{0}\right)=\int_{R^{n}}\left(\frac{K(x, y)}{|x-y|^{m}}-\frac{K\left(x_{0}, y\right)}{\left|x_{0}-y\right|^{m}}\right) \prod_{j=1}^{2} R_{m_{j}}\left(\tilde{A}_{j} ; x, y\right) h_{i}(y) d y \\
& \quad+\int_{R^{n}}\left(R_{m_{1}}\left(\tilde{A}_{1} ; x, y\right)-R_{m_{1}}\left(\tilde{A}_{1} ; x_{0}, y\right)\right) \frac{R_{m_{2}}\left(\tilde{A}_{2} ; x, y\right)}{\left|x_{0}-y\right|^{m}} K\left(x_{0}, y\right) h_{i}(y) d y \\
& \quad+\int_{R^{n}}\left(R_{m_{2}}\left(\tilde{A}_{2} ; x, y\right)-R_{m_{2}}\left(\tilde{A}_{2} ; x_{0}, y\right)\right) \frac{R_{m_{1}}\left(\tilde{A}_{1} ; x_{0}, y\right)}{\left|x_{0}-y\right|^{m}} K\left(x_{0}, y\right) h_{i}(y) d y \\
& \quad-\sum_{\left|\alpha_{1}\right|=m_{1}} \frac{1}{\alpha_{1}!} \int_{R^{n}}\left[\frac{R_{m_{2}}\left(\tilde{A}_{2} ; x, y\right)(x-y)^{\alpha_{1}}}{|x-y|^{m}} K(x, y)\right. \\
& \left.\quad-\frac{R_{m_{2}}\left(\tilde{A}_{2} ; x_{0}, y\right)\left(x_{0}-y\right)^{\alpha_{1}}}{\left|x_{0}-y\right|^{m}} K\left(x_{0}, y\right)\right] D^{\alpha_{1}} \tilde{A}_{1}(y) h_{i}(y) d y
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \quad-\sum_{\left|\alpha_{2}\right|=m_{2}} \frac{1}{\alpha_{2}!} \int_{R^{n}}\left[\frac{R_{m_{1}}\left(\tilde{A}_{1} ; x, y\right)(x-y)^{\alpha_{2}}}{|x-y|^{m}} K(x, y)\right. \\
& - \\
& \left.-\frac{R_{m_{1}}\left(\tilde{A}_{1} ; x_{0}, y\right)\left(x_{0}-y\right)^{\alpha_{2}}}{\left|x_{0}-y\right|^{m}} K\left(x_{0}, y\right)\right] D^{\alpha_{2}} \tilde{A}_{2}(y) h_{i}(y) d y \\
& \quad+\sum_{\left|\alpha_{1}\right|=m_{1},\left|\alpha_{2}\right|=m_{2}} \frac{1}{\alpha_{1}!\alpha_{2}!} \int_{R^{n}}\left[\frac{(x-y)^{\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}}}{|x-y|^{m}} K(x, y)-\frac{\left(x_{0}-y\right)^{\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}}}{\left|x_{0}-y\right|^{m}} K\left(x_{0}, y\right)\right] \\
& \\
& =D_{5}^{\alpha_{1}} \tilde{A}_{1}(y) D^{\alpha_{2}} \tilde{A}_{2}(y) h_{i}(y) d y \\
& I_{5}^{(1)}+I_{5}^{(2)}+I_{5}^{(3)}+I_{5}^{(4)}+I_{5}^{(5)}+I_{5}^{(6)} .
\end{aligned}
$$

By Lemma 1 and the following inequality(see [20])

$$
\left|b_{Q_{1}}-b_{Q_{2}}\right| \leq C \log \left(\left|Q_{2}\right| /\left|Q_{1}\right|\right)| | b \|_{B M O} \text { for } Q_{1} \subset Q_{2},
$$

we know that, for $x \in Q$ and $y \in 2^{k+1} \tilde{Q} \backslash 2^{k} \tilde{Q}$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|R_{m_{j}}\left(\tilde{A}_{j} ; x, y\right)\right| & \leq C|x-y|^{m_{j}} \sum_{\left|\alpha_{j}\right|=m_{j}}\left(\left\|D^{\alpha_{j}} A\right\|_{B M O}+\left|\left(D^{\alpha_{j}} A\right)_{\tilde{Q}(x, y)}-\left(D^{\alpha_{j}} A\right)_{\tilde{Q}}\right|\right) \\
& \leq C k|x-y|^{m_{j}} \sum_{\left|\alpha_{j}\right|=m_{j}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{j}} A\right\|_{B M O} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Note that $|x-y| \sim\left|x_{0}-y\right|$ for $x \in Q$ and $y \in R^{n} \backslash \tilde{Q}$, we obtain, by the conditions on $K$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|I_{5}^{(1)}\right| \leq & \left.C \int_{R^{n}}\left(\frac{\left|x-x_{0}\right|}{\left|x_{0}-y\right|^{m+n+1}}+\frac{\left|x-x_{0}\right|^{\varepsilon}}{\left|x_{0}-y\right|^{m+n+\varepsilon}}\right) \prod_{j=1}^{2} R_{m_{j}}\left(\tilde{A}_{j} ; x, y\right)| | h_{i}(y) \right\rvert\, d y \\
\leq & C \prod_{j=1}^{2}\left(\sum_{\left|\alpha_{j}\right|=m_{j}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{j}} A_{j} \mid\right\|_{B M O}\right) \\
& \times \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \int_{2^{k+1} \tilde{Q} \backslash 2^{k} \tilde{Q}} k^{2}\left(\frac{\left|x-x_{0}\right|}{\left|x_{0}-y\right|^{n+1}}+\frac{\left|x-x_{0}\right|^{\varepsilon}}{\left|x_{0}-y\right|^{n+\varepsilon}}\right)\left|f_{i}(y)\right| d y \\
\leq & C \prod_{j=1}^{2}\left(\sum_{|\alpha|=m_{j}}\left\|D^{\alpha} A_{j}\right\|_{B M O}\right) \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} k^{2}\left(2^{-k}+2^{-\varepsilon k}\right) \frac{1}{\left|2^{k} \tilde{Q}\right|} \int_{2^{k} \tilde{Q}}\left|f_{i}(y)\right| d y,
\end{aligned}
$$

thus, by Minkowski' inequality,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(\sum_{i=1}^{\infty}\left|I_{5}^{(1)}\right|^{s}\right)^{1 / s} \leq & C \prod_{j=1}^{2}\left(\sum_{|\alpha|=m_{j}}\left\|D^{\alpha} A_{j}\right\|_{B M O}\right) \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} k^{2}\left(2^{-k}+2^{-\varepsilon k}\right) \\
& \times \frac{1}{\left|2^{k} \tilde{Q}\right|} \int_{2^{k} \tilde{Q}}|f(y)|_{s} d y
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\leq C \prod_{j=1}^{2}\left(\sum_{|\alpha|=m_{j}}\left\|D^{\alpha} A_{j}\right\|_{B M O}\right) M\left(|f|_{s}\right)(\tilde{x})
$$

For $I_{5}^{(2)}$, by the formula (see [3]):

$$
R_{m_{j}}(\tilde{A} ; x, y)-R_{m_{j}}\left(\tilde{A} ; x_{0}, y\right)=\sum_{|\beta|<m_{j}} \frac{1}{\beta!} R_{m_{j}-|\beta|}\left(D^{\beta} \tilde{A} ; x, x_{0}\right)(x-y)^{\beta}
$$

and Lemma 1, we have

$$
\left|R_{m_{j}}(\tilde{A} ; x, y)-R_{m_{j}}\left(\tilde{A} ; x_{0}, y\right)\right| \leq C \sum_{|\beta|<m_{j}} \sum_{|\alpha|=m_{j}}\left|x-x_{0}\right|^{m_{j}-|\beta|}|x-y|^{|\beta|}| | D^{\alpha} A \|_{B M O}
$$

thus

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(\sum_{i=1}^{\infty}\left|I_{5}^{(2)}\right|^{s}\right)^{1 / s} \leq & C \prod_{j=1}^{2}\left(\sum_{\left|\alpha_{j}\right|=m_{j}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{j}} A_{j}\right\|_{B M O}\right) \\
& \times \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \int_{2^{k+1} \tilde{Q} \backslash 2^{k} \tilde{Q}} k \frac{\left|x-x_{0}\right|}{\left|x_{0}-y\right|^{n+1}}|f(y)|_{s} d y \\
\leq & C \prod_{j=1}^{2}\left(\sum_{\left|\alpha_{j}\right|=m_{j}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{j}} A_{j}\right\|_{B M O}\right) M\left(|f|_{s}\right)(\tilde{x})
\end{aligned}
$$

Similarly,

$$
\left(\sum_{i=1}^{\infty}\left|I_{5}^{(3)}\right|^{s}\right)^{1 / s} \leq C \prod_{j=1}^{2}\left(\sum_{\left|\alpha_{j}\right|=m_{j}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{j}} A_{j}\right\|_{B M O}\right) M\left(|f|_{s}\right)(\tilde{x})
$$

For $I_{5}^{(4)}$, similar to the proof of $I_{5}^{(1)}, I_{5}^{(2)}$ and $I_{2}$, we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\sum_{i=1}^{\infty}\left|I_{5}^{(4)}\right|^{s}\right)^{1 / s} \\
\leq & C \sum_{\left|\alpha_{1}\right|=m_{1}} \int_{R^{n} \backslash \tilde{Q}}\left|\frac{(x-y)^{\alpha_{1}} K(x, y)}{|x-y|^{m}}-\frac{\left(x_{0}-y\right)^{\alpha_{1}} K\left(x_{0}, y\right)}{\left|x_{0}-y\right|^{m}}\right| \\
& \times\left|R_{m_{2}}\left(\tilde{A}_{2} ; x, y\right)\right|\left|D^{\alpha_{1}} \tilde{A}_{1}(y)\right||f(y)|_{s} d y \\
& +C \sum_{\left|\alpha_{1}\right|=m_{1}} \int_{R^{n} \backslash \tilde{Q}}\left|R_{m_{2}}\left(\tilde{A}_{2} ; x, y\right)-R_{m_{2}}\left(\tilde{A}_{2} ; x_{0}, y\right)\right| \\
& \times \frac{\left|\left(x_{0}-y\right)^{\alpha_{1}} K\left(x_{0}, y\right)\right|}{\left|x_{0}-y\right|^{m}}\left|D^{\alpha_{1}} \tilde{A}_{1}(y)\right||f(y)|_{s} d y
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\leq & C \sum_{\left|\alpha_{2}\right|=m_{2}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{2}} A_{2}\right\|_{B M O} \sum_{\left|\alpha_{1}\right|=m_{1}} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} k\left(2^{-k}+2^{-\varepsilon k}\right) \frac{1}{\left|2^{k} \tilde{Q}\right|} \int_{2^{k} \tilde{Q}}\left|D^{\alpha_{1}} \tilde{A}_{1}(y)\right||f(y)|_{s} d y \\
\leq & C \sum_{\left|\alpha_{2}\right|=m_{2}} \|\left. D^{\alpha_{2}} A_{2}\right|_{B M O} \sum_{\left|\alpha_{1}\right|=m_{1}} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} k\left(2^{-k}+2^{-\varepsilon k}\right) \\
& \times\left.\left\|D^{\alpha_{1}} A_{1}-\left(D^{\alpha_{1}} A_{1}\right)_{\tilde{Q}}\right\|_{e x p L, 2^{k}}\| \| f\right|_{s} \|_{L(l o g L), 2^{k} \tilde{Q}} \\
\leq & C \prod_{j=1}^{2}\left(\sum_{\left|\alpha_{j}\right|=m_{j}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{j}} A_{j}\right\|_{B M O}\right) M^{2}\left(|f|_{s}\right)(\tilde{x}) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Similarly,

$$
\left(\sum_{i=1}^{\infty}\left|I_{5}^{(5)}\right|^{s}\right)^{1 / s} \leq C \prod_{j=1}^{2}\left(\sum_{\left|\alpha_{j}\right|=m_{j}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{j}} A_{j}\right\|_{B M O}\right) M^{2}\left(|f|_{s}\right)(\tilde{x}) .
$$

For $I_{5}^{(6)}$, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\sum_{i=1}^{\infty}\left|I_{5}^{(6)}\right|^{s}\right)^{1 / s} \\
\leq & C \sum_{\left|\alpha_{1}\right|=m_{1},\left|\alpha_{2}\right|=m_{2}} \int_{R^{n} \backslash \tilde{Q}}\left|\frac{(x-y)^{\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}} K(x, y)}{|x-y|^{m}}-\frac{\left(x_{0}-y\right)^{\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}} K\left(x_{0}, y\right)}{\left|x_{0}-y\right|^{m}}\right| \\
& \times\left|D^{\alpha_{1}} \tilde{A}_{1}(y)\right|\left|D^{\alpha_{2}} \tilde{A}_{2}(y)\right||f(y)|_{s} d y \\
\leq & C \sum_{\left|\alpha_{1}\right|=m_{1},\left|\alpha_{2}\right|=m_{2}} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty}\left(2^{-k}+2^{-\varepsilon k}\right) \frac{1}{\left|2^{k} \tilde{Q}\right|} \int_{2^{k} \tilde{Q}}\left|D^{\alpha_{1}} \tilde{A}_{1}(y)\right|\left|D^{\alpha_{2}} \tilde{A}_{2}(y)\right||f(y)|_{s} d y \\
\leq & C \sum_{\left|\alpha_{1}\right|=m_{1},\left|\alpha_{2}\right|=m_{2}} \prod_{j=1}^{2}\left\|D^{\alpha_{j}} A_{j}-\left(D^{\alpha_{j}} A_{j}\right)_{\tilde{Q}}\right\|_{e x p L^{r_{j}, 2^{k} \tilde{Q}}} \cdot| ||f|_{s} \|_{L(\operatorname{logL})^{1 / r}, 2^{k} \tilde{Q}} \\
\leq & C \prod_{j=1}^{2}\left(\sum_{\left|\alpha_{j}\right|=m_{j}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{j}} A_{j}\right\|_{B M O}\right) M^{3}\left(\left.|f|\right|_{s}\right)(\tilde{x}) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus

$$
\left|I_{5}\right| \leq C \prod_{j=1}^{2}\left(\sum_{\left|\alpha_{j}\right|=m_{j}}\left\|D^{\alpha_{j}} A_{j}\right\|_{B M O}\right) M^{3}\left(|f|_{s}\right)(\tilde{x}) .
$$

This completes the proof of Theorem 1.
By Lemmas 4-7, we get, for $f=\left\{f_{i}\right\} \in L_{0}^{\infty}\left(R^{n}\right)$ and $g \in L^{p^{\prime}(\cdot)}\left(R^{n}\right)$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{R^{n}}\left|T_{A}(f)(x)\right|_{s} g(x) \mid d x & \leq C \int_{R^{n}} M_{\lambda_{n}}^{\#}\left(\left.T_{A}(f)\right|_{s}\right)(x) M(g)(x) \mid d x \\
& \leq C \int_{R^{n}}\left(\left.T_{A}(f)\right|_{s}\right)_{\delta}^{\#}(x) M(g)(x) d x
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \leq C \int_{R^{n}} M^{l+1}\left(|f|_{s}\right)(x) M(g)(x) d x \\
& \leq C\left\|M^{l+1}\left(|f|_{s}\right)\right\|_{L^{p(\cdot)}}\|M(g)\|_{L^{p^{\prime}(\cdot)}} \\
& \leq C\left\|\left.| | f\right|_{s}\right\|_{L^{p(\cdot)}}\|g\|_{L^{p^{\prime}(\cdot)}}
\end{aligned}
$$

thus, by Lemma 8,

$$
\left\|\left|\left|T_{A}(f)(x)\right|_{s}\left\|_{L^{p(\cdot)}} \leq\right\|\left\|\left.f\right|_{s}\right\|_{L^{p(\cdot)}} .\right.\right.
$$

This completes the proof of Theorem 2.

## References

[1] Cohen J. A sharp estimate for a multilinear singular integral on $R^{n}$. Indiana Univ. Math. J., 1981, 30, 693-702.
[2] Cohen J., Gosselin J. On multilinear singular integral operators on $R^{n}$. Studia Math., 1982, 72, 199-223.
[3] Cohen J., Gosselin J. A BMO estimate for multilinear singular integral operators. Illinois J. Math., 1986, 30, 445-465.
[4] Coifman R., Meyer Y. Wavelets, Calderón-Zygmund and multilinear operators. Cambridge Studies in Advanced Math. 48, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 1997.
[5] Cruz-Uribe D., Fiorenza A., Neugebauer C. J. The maximal function on variable $L^{p}$ spaces. Ann. Acad. Fenn. Math., 2003, 28, 223-238.
[6] Diening L. Maximal function on generalized Lebesgue spaces $L^{p(\cdot)}$. Math. Ineql. Appl., 2004, 7, 245-253.
[7] Diening L. Maximal function on Musielak-Orlicz spaces and generalized Lebesgue spaces. Preprint.
[8] Diening L., Ruzicka M. Calderón-Zygmund operators on generalized Lebesgue spaces $L^{p(\cdot)}$ and problems related to fluid dynamics. J. Reine Angew. Math., 2003, 563, 197-220.
[9] Ding Y., Lu S. Z. Weighted boundedness for a class rough multilinear operators. Acta Math. Sinica, 2001, 17, 517-526.
[10] Fefferman C., Stein E. M. Some maximal inequalities. Amer. J. Math., 1971, 93, 107-115.
[11] Garcia-Cuerva J., Rubio de Francia J. L. Weighted norm inequalities and related topics. North-Holland Math. 116, Amsterdam, 1985.
[12] Hu G. E., Yang D. C. A variant sharp estimate for multilinear singular integral operators. Studia Math., 2000, 141, 25-42.
[13] Karlovich A. Y., Lerner A. K. Commutators of singular integrals on generalized $L^{p}$ spaces with variable exponent. Publ. Mat. 2005, 49, No. 1, 111--125.
[14] Lerner A. K. Weighted norm inequalities for the local sharp maximal function. J. Fourier Anal. Appl., 2004, 10, 214-231.
[15] Nekvinda A. Hardy-Littlewood maximal operator on $L^{p(x)}\left(R^{n}\right)$. Math. Ineql. Appl., 2004, 7, 255-265.
[16] PÉrez C. Endpoint estimate for commutators of singular integral operators. J. Func. Anal., 1995, 128, 163-185.
[17] Pérez C., Pradolini G. Sharp weighted endpoint estimates for commutators of singular integral operators. Michigan Math. J., 2001, 49, 23-37.
[18] Pérez C., Trujillo-Gonzalez R. Sharp weighted estimates for multilinear commutators. J. London Math. Soc., 2002, 65, 672-692.
[19] Perez C., Trujillo-Gonzalez R. Sharp weighted estimates for vector-valued singular integral operators and commutators. Tohoku Math. J., 2003, 55, 109-129.
[20] Stein E. M. Harmonic analysis: real variable methods, orthogonality and oscillatory integrals. Princeton Univ. Press, Princeton NJ, 1993.

Jing Du, Chuangxia Huang, Lanzhe Liu
Received April 6, 2011
College of Mathematics
Revised October 19, 2011
Changsha University of Science and Technology
Changsha, 410077
China
E-mail: 17719360@qq.com; cxiahuang@126.com;
lanzheliu@163.com

# On Frattini subloops and normalizers of commutative Moufang loops 

N. I. Sandu


#### Abstract

Let $L$ be a commutative Moufang loop (CML) with the multiplication group $\mathfrak{M}$, and let $\mathfrak{F}(L), \mathfrak{F}(\mathfrak{M})$ be the Frattini subloop of $L$ and Frattini subgroup of $\mathfrak{M}$. It is proved that $\mathfrak{F}(L)=L$ if and only if $\mathfrak{F}(\mathfrak{M})=\mathfrak{M}$, and the structure of this CML is described. The notion of normalizer for subloops in CML is defined constructively. Using this it is proved that if $\mathfrak{F}(L) \neq L$, then $L$ satisfies the normalizer condition and that any divisible subgroup of $\mathfrak{M}$ is an abelian group and serves as a direct factor for $\mathfrak{M}$.


Mathematics subject classification: 20 N 05 .
Keywords and phrases: Commutative Moufang loop, multiplication group, Frattini subloop, Frattini subgroup, normalizer, loop with normalizer condition, divisible loop.

It is known that in many classes of algebras the Frattini subalgebras essentially determine the structure of these algebras. In this paper this dependance is considered in the class of commutative Moufang loops (CML) and their multiplication groups. Let $L$ be a CML with the multiplication group $\mathfrak{M}$, let $\mathfrak{F}(L)$ and $\mathfrak{F}(\mathfrak{M})$ denote the Frattini subloop of $L$ and the Frattini subgroup of $\mathfrak{M}$. It is proved that $\mathfrak{F}(L)=L$ if and only if $\mathfrak{F}(\mathfrak{M})=\mathfrak{M}$, and the structure of this CML and groups is described. In particular, if $L$ has the exponent 3 , then $\mathfrak{F}(L)=L$ if and only if $L=L^{\prime}$, where $L^{\prime}$ denotes the associator subloop of $L$ (Theorem 1). The existence of CML with $L^{\prime}=L$ is proved in [1].

The normalizer $N_{L}(H)$ is defined constructively for subloop $H$ of commutative Moufang loop $L$ which, in general, has the same role as a normalizer for subgroups. The normalizer $N_{L}(H)$ is the unique maximal subloop of $L$ such that $H$ is normal in $N_{L}(H)$. By analogy with the group theory the notion of CML with normalizer condition is defined: every proper subloop of CML differs from his normalizer. Using essentially Theorem 1 , it is proved that if a CML $L$ satisfies the inequality $\mathfrak{F}(L) \neq L$ then $L$ satisfies the normalizer condition. It is proved also that for multiplication groups of CML an analogous situation does not take place. There exists a CML $L$ with multiplication group $\mathfrak{M}$ such that $\mathfrak{F}(\mathfrak{M}) \neq \mathfrak{M}$, but $\mathfrak{M}$ does not satisfy the normalizer condition.

Again, using essentially Theorem 1 it is proved that every divisible subgroup of multiplication group $\mathfrak{M}$ of any CML is an abelian group and serves as a direct factor for $\mathfrak{M}$ (Theorem 2). A similar result for divisible subloops of CML is proved in [2]. We note that in general case Theorem 2 is not true. In [3, Theorem 2.7

[^1]and Example 2.2] there is an example of a divisible non-periodic and non-abelian $Z A$-group.

At last we note that the material of present article has been published earlier, in [4].

## 1 Preliminaries

Let us bring some notions and results on the loop theory from [5, 6].
The multiplication group $\mathfrak{M}(L)$ of a loop $L$ is the group generated by all translations $L(x), R(x)$, where $L(x) y=x y, R(x) y=y x$. The subgroup $\mathfrak{I}(L)$ of group $\mathfrak{M}(L)$, generated by all inner mappings $L(x, y)=L^{-1}(x y) L(x) L(y)$, $R(x, y)=R^{-1}(x y) R(y) R(x), T(x)=L^{-1}(x) R(x)$ is called the inner mapping group of loop $L$. A subloop $H$ of a loop $L$ is called normal in $L$ if $\Im(L) H=H$. The set of all elements $x \in L$ which commute and associate with all elements of $L$ so that for all $a, b \in L a x=x a, a b \cdot x=a \cdot b x, a x \cdot b=a \cdot x b, x a \cdot b=x \cdot a b$ is a normal subloop $Z(L)$ of $L$, its centre.

Lemma 1 (see [5, p. 63]). Let $H$ be a normal subloop of loop $L$ with the multiplication group $\mathfrak{M}$. Then $\mathfrak{M}(L / H) \cong \mathfrak{M} / H^{*}$ where $H^{*}=\{\alpha \in \mathfrak{M} \mid(\alpha x) H=$ $x H \quad \forall x \in L\}$. Conversely, every normal subgroup $\mathfrak{N}$ of $\mathfrak{M}$ determines a normal subloop $H=\mathfrak{N} 1=\{\alpha 1 \mid \alpha \in \mathfrak{N}\}$ of $L$ and $\mathfrak{N} \subseteq H^{*}$.

Proposition 1. Let $(L, \cdot, 1)$ be a loop with centre $Z(L)$, let $\mathfrak{M}$ be its multiplication group with centre $Z(\mathfrak{M})$ and let $\tilde{Z}(L)=\{\varphi 1 \mid \varphi \in Z(\mathfrak{M})\}, \tilde{Z}(\mathfrak{M})=\{L(\varphi 1) \mid \varphi \in$ $Z(\mathfrak{M})\}, \bar{Z}(\mathfrak{M})=\{L(a) \mid a \in Z(L)\}$. Then $\bar{Z}(L)=Z(L) \cong \bar{Z}(\mathfrak{M})=\tilde{Z}(\mathfrak{M})=Z(\mathfrak{M})$.

Proof. Let $a \in Z(Q)$ and $x, y \in L$. Then $R(a)=L(a), a \cdot a^{-1} x=x, L(a) L\left(a^{-1}\right) x=x$ $L\left(a^{-1}\right)=L^{-1}(a)$ and $a \cdot x y=a x \cdot y, L(a) L(y) x=L(y) L(a) x, L(a) L(y)=$ $L(y) L(a)$. Similarly, for $a^{-1} \in Z(L)$ we obtain that $L\left(a^{-1}\right) R(y)=R(y) L\left(a^{-1}\right)$. Then $\left(L\left(a^{-1}\right) R(y)\right)^{-1}=\left(R(y) L\left(a^{-1}\right)\right)^{-1}, R^{-1}(y) L^{-1}\left(a^{-1}\right)=L^{-1}\left(a^{-1}\right) R^{-1}(y)$, $R^{-1}(y) L(a)=L(a) R^{-1}(y)$. Analogously, from $y x \cdot a=y \cdot x a$ and $R(a)=L(a)$ we get $L(a) L(y)=L(y) L(a), L(a) L^{-1}(y)=L(y)^{-1} L(a)$. Then from the definition of the group $\mathfrak{M}(L)$ it follows that $L(a) \in Z(\mathfrak{M})$. Similarly, for $a^{-1} \in Z(L)$ we get that $L\left(a^{-1}\right)=L^{-1}(a) \in Z(\mathfrak{M})$. We also have $L(a) L(b)=L(a b)$ for $a, b \in Z(L)$. Then the set $\bar{Z}(\mathfrak{M})$ is a subgroup of $\mathfrak{M}, \bar{Z}(\mathfrak{M}) \subseteq Z(\mathfrak{M})$ and the isomorphism $Z(L) \cong \bar{Z}(\mathfrak{M})$, defined by $u \rightarrow L(u), u^{-1} \rightarrow L^{-1}(u), u \in L$, follows from the equality $L(a) L(b)=L(a b)$.

If $\varphi \in Z(\mathfrak{M})$, then $\varphi L(x)=L(x) \varphi, \varphi L(x) y=L(x) \varphi y, \varphi(x y)=x \cdot \varphi y$ and $\varphi R(x)=R(x) \varphi, \varphi R(x) y=R(x) \varphi y, \varphi(y x)=\varphi y \cdot x$ for any $x, y \in L$. Hence $\varphi(x y)=x \cdot \varphi y$ and $\varphi(y x)=\varphi y \cdot x$. Let $y=1$. Then $\varphi x=x \cdot \varphi 1, \varphi x=\varphi 1 \cdot x$, i.e. $\quad x \cdot \varphi 1=\varphi 1 \cdot x$. Now, using the equality $\varphi(x y)=x \cdot \varphi y$ we obtain that $x y \cdot \varphi 1=\varphi(x y \cdot 1)=\varphi(x y)=x \cdot \varphi y=x \cdot \varphi(y \cdot 1)=x(y \cdot \varphi 1)$ and using the equality $\varphi(y x)=\varphi y \cdot x$ we obtain that $\varphi 1 \cdot x y=\varphi(1 \cdot x y)=\varphi(x y)=\varphi x \cdot y=\varphi(1 \cdot x) y=$ $(\varphi 1 \cdot x) y$. Hence, if $\varphi \in Z(\mathfrak{M})$ then $\varphi 1 \in Z(L)$, i.e. $\tilde{Z}(L) \subseteq Z(L)$. Conversely,
let $a \in Z(L)$. Then $L(a) \in Z(\mathfrak{M})$ and $a=L(a) 1 \in \tilde{Z}(L)$. Hence $Z(L) \subseteq \tilde{Z}(L)$ Consequently, $Z(L)=\tilde{Z}(L)$ and therefore $\bar{Z}(\mathfrak{M})=\tilde{Z}(\mathfrak{M})$.

Let $\mathfrak{I}(L)$ be the inner mapping group of $\mathfrak{M}$. In the proof of Lemma IV.1.2 from [5] it is shown that each element $\alpha \in \mathfrak{M}$ has the form $\alpha=L(\alpha 1) \theta$ where $\theta \in \mathfrak{I}(L)$; moreover $\alpha \in \mathfrak{I}(L)$ if and only if $L(\alpha 1)=e$ where $e$ is the unit of $\mathfrak{M}$. Let $\mathfrak{J}(L)=$ $\mathfrak{I}(L) \cap Z(\mathfrak{M})$. If $\alpha \in Z(\mathfrak{M})$ then, by the cases considered above, $L(\alpha 1) \in \bar{Z}(\mathfrak{M})$. Then $\theta \in \mathfrak{J}(L)$. The subgroups $\bar{Z}(\mathfrak{M}) \subseteq Z(\mathfrak{M})$ and $\mathfrak{J}(L) \subseteq Z(\mathfrak{M})$ are normal in $\mathfrak{M}$. As $\bar{Z}(\mathfrak{M}) \cap \mathfrak{J}(L)=\varepsilon$ then $Z(\mathfrak{M})=\bar{Z}(\mathfrak{M}) \times \mathfrak{J}(L)$. By Lemma $1 \mathfrak{J}(L) 1=1$ is a normal subloop of $L$ and $\mathfrak{J}(L) \subseteq 1^{*}$ where $1^{*}=\{\alpha \in \mathfrak{M} \mid(\alpha x) 1=x 1 \quad \forall x \in L\}$. But $1^{*}=e$, hence $\mathfrak{J}(L)=e$ and $Z(\mathfrak{M})=\bar{Z}(\mathfrak{M})$, as required.

A system $\Sigma$ of subloops of loop $L$ will be called a subnormal system if:

1) it contains 1 and $L$;

2 ) it is linearly ordered by inclusion, i. e. for all $A, B$ from $\Sigma$ either $A \subseteq B$, or $B \subseteq A$;
3) it is closed with respect to the unions and intersections, in particular, together with each $A \neq L$ it contains the intersection $A^{\sharp}$ of all $H \in \Sigma$ with the condition $H \supset A$ and together with each $B \neq 1$ it contains the union $B^{b}$ of all $H \in \Sigma$ with the condition $H \subset B$;
4) it satisfies the condition: $A$ is normal in $A^{\natural}$ for all $A \in \Sigma, A \neq L$.

A system $\Sigma$ is called ascending (respect. descending) if $A^{\sharp} \neq A$ (respect. $B^{b} \neq B$ ) for all $A \in \Sigma, A \neq L$ (respect. $B \in \Sigma, B \neq 1$ ) and is called normal if the subloops $A \in \Sigma$ are normal in $L$.

A loop $L$ may be called an $S D$-loop if it has a descending subnormal system $\Sigma$ such that the quotient loops $A^{\sharp} / A$ are abelian groups for all $A \in \Sigma, A \neq L$. If a loop $L$ has an ascending normal system such that $A^{\sharp} / A \subseteq Z(L / A)$ for all $A \in \Sigma$, $A \neq L$ then $L$ is called a $Z A$-loop.

If the upper central series of the $Z A$-loop has a finite length, then the loop is called centrally nilpotent. The least such length is called the class of the central nilpotency. If the loop $L$ is centrally nilpotent of class $k$ then the upper central series of $L$ has the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
1=Z_{0}(L) \subset Z_{1}(L) \subset \cdots \subset Z_{k}(L)=L \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $Z_{1}(L)=Z(L), Z_{i+1}(L) / Z_{i}(L)=Z\left(L / Z_{i}(L)\right)$.
A commutative Moufang loop $(C M L)$ is characterized by the identity $x^{2} \cdot y z=$ $x y \cdot x z$. The associator $(a, b, c)$ of the elements $a, b, c$ of the CML $Q$ is defined by the equality $a b \cdot c=(a \cdot b c)(a, b, c)$. The identities

$$
\begin{gather*}
L(x, y) z=z(z, y, x)  \tag{2}\\
(x, y, z)=(y, z, x)=\left(y^{-1}, x, z\right)=(y, x, z)^{-1}  \tag{3}\\
(x y, u, v)=(x, u, v)((x, u, v), x, y)(y, u, v)((y, u, v), y, x) \tag{4}
\end{gather*}
$$

hold in the CML.
If $A, B, C$ are subsets of CML $L,(A, B, C)$ denotes the set of all associators $(a, b, c), a \in A, b \in B, c \in C$. If $A=B=C=L$, then the normal subloop $L^{\prime}=(L, L, L)$ is called the associator subloop of CML $L$.

Lemma 2 (see [5]). Let $L$ be a CML with centre $Z(L)$ and let $a \in L$. Then $a^{3} \in Z(L)$.

Lemma 3. If $Z_{2}(L) \neq Z_{1}(L)$ for a $C M L L$ then $L^{\prime} \neq L$.
Proof. If $z \in Z_{2}(L) \backslash Z_{1}(L)$ then $((x, y, z), u, v)=1$ for all $x, y, u, v \in L$ and there exist elements $x_{0}, y_{0} \in L$ such that $\left(x_{0}, y_{0}, z\right) \neq 1$. From (4) it follows that $\left(u v, y_{0}, z\right)=\left(u, y_{0}, z\right)\left(v, y_{0}, z\right)$, which shows that the mapping $\varphi: u \rightarrow\left(u, y_{0}, z\right)$ is a homomorphism of $L$ into $Z_{1}(L)$. The centre $Z_{1}(L)$ is an associative subloop and as $\left(x_{0}, y_{0}, z\right) \neq 1$ then $L^{\prime} \subseteq \operatorname{ker} \varphi$ and $L / \operatorname{ker} \varphi$ is non-unitary. Hence $L^{\prime} \neq L$, as required.

Lemma 4. Let $L$ be a $C M L$ with the multiplication group $\mathfrak{M}$, let $L^{\prime}$ be the associator subloop of $L$ and let $\mathfrak{M}^{\prime}$ be the commutator subgroup of $\mathfrak{M}$. Then $L^{\prime} \subseteq \mathfrak{F}(L)$ and $\mathfrak{M}^{\prime} \subseteq \mathfrak{F}(\mathfrak{M})$.

Proof. The inclusion $L^{\prime} \subseteq \mathfrak{F}(L)$ is proved in [7]. The group $\mathfrak{M}$ is locally nilpotent [2], then the proof of inclusion $\mathfrak{M}^{\prime} \subseteq \mathfrak{F}(\mathfrak{M})$ can be found, for example, in [8].

## 2 Frattini subloops

If $S, T, \ldots$ are subsets of elements of a loop $L$, let $<S, T, \ldots>$ denote the subloop of $L$ generated by $S, T, \ldots$. An element $x$ of a loop $L$ is a non-generator of $L$ if, for every subset $S$ of $L,<x, S>=L$ implies $<S>=L$. The non-generators of $L$ form the Frattini subloop, $\mathfrak{F}(L)$, of $L$. If $L$ has at least one maximal proper subloop, then $\mathfrak{F}(L)$ is the intersection of all maximal proper subloops of $L$. In the contrary case, $\mathfrak{F}(L)=L[5]$.

Lemma 5. Let $\theta$ be a homomorphism of the loop $L$ into a loop and let $\mathfrak{F}(L)=L$. Then $\mathfrak{F}(\theta L)=\theta L$.

Proof. In [5] it is proved that if $\varphi$ is a homomorphism of the loop $L$ into a loop, then $\varphi(\mathfrak{F}(L)) \subseteq \mathfrak{F}(\varphi(L))$. In our case we have $\theta L=\theta(\mathfrak{F}(L)) \subseteq \mathfrak{F}(\theta L) \subseteq \theta L$. Hence $\mathfrak{F}(\theta L))=\theta L$, as required.

Lemma 6. For a CML $L$ with the multiplication group $\mathfrak{M}$ the following statements are equivalent: 1) $\mathfrak{F}(\mathfrak{M})=\mathfrak{M}$; 2) $\mathfrak{F}(L)=L$.

Proof. 1) $\Rightarrow 2$ ). Let $\mathfrak{F}(\mathfrak{M})=\mathfrak{M}$ and we assume that $\mathfrak{F}(L) \neq L$. Then $L$ has at least one maximal proper subloop $H$ and $\mathfrak{F}(L)$ is the intersection of all such subloops. By Lemma 4 the associator subloop $L^{\prime}$ lies in $\mathfrak{F}(L)$. Hence $H$ is a normal subloop of $L$ and the quotient loop $L / H$ is a cyclic group of prime order $p$. Then
$\mathfrak{M}(L / H)$ is a cyclic group of order $p$ too, and by Lemma $1 \mathfrak{M} / H^{*}$ is a cyclic group of order $p$. Consequently, $H^{*}$ is a maximal proper subgroup of $\mathfrak{M}$. Then $\mathfrak{F}(\mathfrak{M}) \neq \mathfrak{M}$. Contradiction. Hence 1) implies 2).

Conversely, let $\mathfrak{F}(L)=L$ and we assume that $\mathfrak{F}(\mathfrak{M}) \neq \mathfrak{M}$. Let $\mathfrak{N}$ be a maximal proper subgroup of $\mathfrak{M} . \mathfrak{M}$ is a locally nilpotent group [2], then by Lemma 4 the commutator subgroup $\mathfrak{M}^{\prime}$ lies in $\mathfrak{F}(\mathfrak{M})$. Then $\mathfrak{N}$ is a normal subgroup of $\mathfrak{M}$ and $\mathfrak{M} / \mathfrak{N}$ is a cyclic group of prime order $p$. By Lemma $1 \mathfrak{N} 1=H$ is a normal subloop of $L$ and $\mathfrak{N} \subseteq H^{*}$. Then from $\mathfrak{M}(L / H) \cong \mathfrak{M} / H^{*}$ it follows that $L / H$ is a cyclic group of order $p$. Hence $H$ is a maximal subloop of $L$. Then $\mathfrak{F}(L) \neq L$. Contradiction. Hence 2) implies 1).

Let $M(H)$ denote the subgroup of multiplication group of CML $L$, generated by $\{L(x) \mid \forall x \in H\}$, where $H$ is a subset of $L$.

Lemma 7 (see [9]). Let $L$ be a CML with the multiplication group $\mathfrak{M}(L)$ and the inner mapping group $\mathfrak{\Im}(L)$. Then $\mathfrak{M}(L)^{\prime}=<\mathfrak{I}(L), M\left(L^{\prime}\right)>=\left(L^{\prime}\right)^{\star}=\overline{\mathfrak{I}(L)}$, where $\left(L^{\prime}\right)^{\star}=\left\{\alpha \in \mathfrak{M}(L) \mid \alpha x \cdot L^{\prime}=x L^{\prime} \quad \forall x \in L\right\}, \overparen{\mathfrak{I}(L)}$ is the normal subgroup of $\mathfrak{M}(L)$, generated by $\mathfrak{J}(L)$.

Proposition 2. For a CML $L$ with the multiplication group $\mathfrak{M}$ the following statements are equivalent: 1) $\mathfrak{F}(L)=L$ and $L$ satisfies the identity $x^{3}=1$; 2) $L=L^{\prime}$; 3) $\mathfrak{M}=\mathfrak{M}^{\prime}$; 4) $\mathfrak{F}(L)=L$ and $Z(L)=\{1\}$; 5) $\mathfrak{F}(\mathfrak{M})=\mathfrak{M}$ and $Z(\mathfrak{M})=\{e\}$.
Proof. 1) $\Leftrightarrow 2$ ). As $\mathfrak{F}(L)=L$ then by Lemma $5 \mathfrak{F}\left(L / L^{\prime}\right)=L / L^{\prime}$. In [10] it is proved that for an abelian group $G \mathfrak{F}(G)=G$ if and only if $G$ is a divisible group. The abelian group $L / L^{\prime}$ satisfies the identity $x^{3}=1 . L / L^{\prime}$ is a divisible group, then $L / L^{\prime}$ is a unitary group. Hence $L^{\prime}=L$, i.e. 1) implies 2). Conversely, let $L^{\prime}=L$. By [5] the associator subloop $L^{\prime}$ satisfies the identity $x^{3}=1$ and from the relations $L=L^{\prime} \subseteq \mathfrak{F}(L) \subseteq L$ it follows that $\mathfrak{F}(L)=L$. Hence 2) implies 1 ).

1) $\Rightarrow 3$ ). By Lemma $6 \mathfrak{F}(L)=L$ implies $\mathfrak{F}(\mathfrak{M})=\mathfrak{M}$. Like in the previous case from here it follows that $\mathfrak{M} / \mathfrak{M}^{\prime}$ is a divisible abelian group. By definition the group $\mathfrak{M}$ is generated by translations $L(x), x \in L$. Then from the identity $x^{3}=1$ for $L$ and diassociativity of $L$ it follows that the divisible abelian group $\mathfrak{M} / \mathfrak{M}^{\prime}$ satisfies the identity $x^{3}=1$. Then $\mathfrak{M} / \mathfrak{M}^{\prime}$ is a unitary group. Hence $\mathfrak{M}^{\prime}=\mathfrak{M}$, i.e. 1) $\Rightarrow 3$ ).

Conversely, let $\mathfrak{M}^{\prime}=\mathfrak{M}$. By Lemma $4 \mathfrak{M}^{\prime} \subseteq \mathfrak{F}(\mathfrak{M})$. Then from the relations $\mathfrak{M}=\mathfrak{M}^{\prime} \subseteq \mathfrak{F}(\mathfrak{M}) \subseteq \mathfrak{M}$ it follows that $\mathfrak{F}(\mathfrak{M})=\mathfrak{M}$. By Lemma $1 \mathfrak{M}\left(L / L^{\prime}\right) \cong$ $\mathfrak{M} /\left(L^{\prime}\right)^{*} . \mathfrak{M}\left(L / L^{\prime}\right)$ is an abelian group. Then $\mathfrak{M}^{\prime} \subseteq\left(L^{\prime}\right)^{*}$ and from the relation $\mathfrak{M}^{\prime}=\mathfrak{M}$ it follows that $\mathfrak{M}\left(L / L^{\prime}\right)$ is unitary group. Hence $L^{\prime}=L$. Consequently, 3) implies 2).
$2) \Rightarrow 4)$. We consider the homomorphism $\alpha: L \rightarrow L / Z(L)$. The elements of quotient loop have the form $a Z(L), a \in L$. From $L=L^{\prime}$ it follows that the element $a$ is a product of associators $(u, v, w), u, v, w \in L$. From the equalities $(u, v, w) Z(L)=(u Z(L), v, w)=(u, v, w), a b \cdot Z(L)=a \cdot b Z(L)=a Z(L) \cdot b$ it follows that if $a Z(L)=b Z(L)$ then $a=b$. But this means that $\alpha$ is an isomorphism. Then $Z(L)=\{1\}$. Consequently, 2) implies 4).

Conversely, let $Z(L)=\{1\}$. Then from Lemma 2 it follows that CML $L$ satisfies the identity $x^{3}=1$. Hence 4) implies 1). Further, the equivalence of statements 4), 5) follows from Lemma 6 and Proposition 1, as required.

Theorem 1. For a CML L with the multiplication group $\mathfrak{M}$ the following statements are equivalent: 1) $\mathfrak{F}(L)=L$; 2) $L$ is a direct product $L=L^{\prime} \times L^{3}$, where $L^{\prime}$ is the associator subloop of $L$ and $L^{3}=\left\{x^{3} \mid x \in L\right\}$ is a divisible abelian group; 3) $\mathfrak{F}(\mathfrak{M})=$ $\mathfrak{M}$; 4) $\mathfrak{M}$ is a direct product $\mathfrak{M}=\mathfrak{M}^{\prime} \times \mathfrak{D}$, where $\mathfrak{M}^{\prime}$ is the commutator subgroup of $\mathfrak{M}$ and $\mathfrak{D}$ is a divisible abelian group. In these cases $\mathfrak{F}\left(L^{\prime}\right)=L^{\prime}, Z\left(L^{\prime}\right)=\{1\}$, $Z(L)=L^{3}, L^{3} \cong \mathfrak{D}, Z(\mathfrak{M})=\mathfrak{D}, \mathfrak{F}\left(\mathfrak{M}^{\prime}\right)=\mathfrak{M}^{\prime}=M\left(L^{\prime}\right)=\left(L^{\prime}\right)^{\star}=\widehat{\mathfrak{I}(L)}$, where $\left(L^{\prime}\right)^{\star}=\left\{\alpha \in \mathfrak{M}(L) \mid \alpha x \cdot L^{\prime}=x L^{\prime} \quad \forall x \in L\right\}, \overline{\mathfrak{I}(L)}$ is the normal subgroup of $\mathfrak{M}(L)$, generated by the inner mapping group $\mathfrak{I}(L), Z\left(\mathfrak{M}^{\prime}\right)=\{e\}$.
Proof. 1) $\Rightarrow 2$ ). Using the diassociativity of CML it is easy to prove that $L^{3}$ is a subloop of $L$. By Lemma $2 L^{3} \subseteq Z(L)$. Then $L^{3}$ is a normal associative subloop of $L$. The quotient loop $L / L^{3}$ satisfies the identity $x^{3}=1$. By Lemma 5 from $\mathfrak{F}(L)=L$ it follows that $\mathfrak{F}\left(L / L^{3}\right)=L / L^{3}$. Then by Proposition $1 L / L^{3}=\left(L / L^{3}\right)^{\prime}$. But $\left(L / L^{3}\right)^{\prime}=L^{\prime} L^{3} / L^{3}$. Then from $L / L^{3}=L^{\prime} L^{3} / L^{3}$ it follows that $L=L^{\prime} L^{3}$. Hence $L / L^{3}=L^{\prime} L^{3} / L^{3} \cong L^{\prime} /\left(L^{\prime} \cap L^{3}\right)$. We have $\mathfrak{F}\left(L^{\prime} /\left(L^{\prime} \cap L^{3}\right)\right)=L^{\prime} /\left(L^{\prime} /\left(L^{\prime} \cap L^{3}\right)\right)$ and $L^{\prime} \cap L^{3} \subseteq Z(L)$. Then by analogy with the proof of implication 1) $\Rightarrow 4$ ) of Proposition 2 it is easy to prove that $L^{\prime} \cap L^{3}=\{1\}$. But $L=L^{\prime} L^{3}$. Then $L=L^{\prime} \times L^{3}$. Further, by Lemma 5 we get that $\mathfrak{F}\left(L^{\prime}\right) \cong \mathfrak{F}\left(L / L^{3}\right)=\mathfrak{F}(L) / L^{3}=L / L^{3} \cong L^{\prime}$, $\mathfrak{F}\left(L^{\prime}\right)=L^{\prime}$ and by Proposition $2 Z\left(L^{\prime}\right)=\{1\}$. Analogously, $\mathfrak{F}\left(L^{3}\right)=L^{3}$. The subloop $L^{3}$ is associative. Then from $\mathfrak{F}\left(L^{3}\right)=L^{3}$ it follows that $L^{3}$ is a divisible abelian group [9]. Consequently, 1) implies 2) and $\mathfrak{F}\left(L^{\prime}\right)=L^{\prime}, Z\left(L^{\prime}\right)=\{1\}$. Further, from $L=L \prime \times L^{3}, Z\left(L^{\prime}\right)=\{1\}$ it follows that $Z(L)=L^{3}$.

Conversely, let $L=L^{\prime} \times L^{3}$ and let $L^{3} \subseteq Z(L)$ be a divisible group. Then $\mathfrak{F}\left(L^{3}\right)=L^{3}$ and $L^{\prime}=\left(L^{\prime} \times L^{3}\right)^{\prime}=\left(L^{\prime}\right)^{\prime}$. By Proposition $2 \mathfrak{F}\left(L^{\prime}\right)=L^{\prime}$. Hence $L=$ $\mathfrak{F}\left(L^{\prime}\right) \times \mathfrak{F}\left(L^{3}\right) . \mathfrak{F}\left(L^{\prime}\right)$ and $\mathfrak{F}\left(L^{3}\right)$ do not have maximal proper subloops. From here it is easy to see that $L$ does not have a maximal proper subloop, either. Then $\mathfrak{F}(L)=L$. Hence 2) implies 1) and, consequently, the statements 1), 2) are equivalent.

The equivalence of statements 1), 3) follows from Lemma 6.
2) $\Leftrightarrow 4$ ). Let $L=L^{\prime} \times L^{3}$. From here it follows that any element $a \in L$ has the form $a=u d$, where $u \in L^{\prime}, d \in L^{3}$. As by Lemma $2 L^{3} \subseteq Z(L)$, then $L(a)=L(u) L(d)$, therefore, $\mathfrak{M}=M\left(L^{\prime}\right) M\left(L^{3}\right)$. Any element $\alpha \in M\left(L^{3}\right)$ has the form $\alpha=L(v)$, where $v \in L^{3}$. Let $\alpha \in M\left(L^{\prime}\right) \cap M\left(L^{3}\right)$. Then $\alpha 1 \in L^{\prime} \cap L^{3}=\{1\}$, $\alpha 1=1, L(v) 1=1, v=1, L(v)=e, M\left(L^{\prime}\right) \cap M\left(L^{3}\right)=\{e\}$. Further, by Proposition 1 $Z(L)=L^{3}$ implies $Z(\mathfrak{M})=M\left(L^{3}\right) \cong Z(L) \cong \mathfrak{D} . M\left(L^{3}\right)$ is a normal subgroup of $\mathfrak{M}$. Then from $\mathfrak{M}=M\left(L^{\prime}\right) M\left(L^{3}\right)$ it follows that $M\left(L^{\prime}\right)$ is also normal in $\mathfrak{M}$. Hence $\mathfrak{M}=M\left(L^{\prime}\right) \times \mathfrak{D}$. The quotient loop $\mathfrak{M} / M\left(L^{\prime}\right)$ is abelian. Then $\mathfrak{M}^{\prime} \subseteq M\left(L^{\prime}\right)$. By Lemma $7 M\left(L^{\prime}\right) \subseteq \mathfrak{M}^{\prime}$. Hence $M\left(L^{\prime}\right)=\mathfrak{M}^{\prime}$. Consequently, $\mathfrak{M}=\mathfrak{M}^{\prime} \times \mathfrak{D}$, i.e. 2) implies 4). Conversely, if $\mathfrak{M}=\mathfrak{M}^{\prime} \times \mathfrak{D}$ then $\mathfrak{M}=M\left(L^{\prime}\right) \times M\left(L^{3}\right)$, $\mathfrak{M} 1=$ $M\left(L^{\prime}\right) 1 \times M\left(L^{3}\right) 1$. Hence, 4) implies 2$)$.

Finally, the equality $\mathfrak{F}\left(\mathfrak{M}^{\prime}\right)=\mathfrak{M}^{\prime}$ follows, by Lemma 5 , from the relations $\mathfrak{F}(\mathfrak{M})=\mathfrak{M}, \mathfrak{M} / M\left(L^{3}\right) \cong \mathfrak{M}^{\prime}$, the equalities $\mathfrak{M}^{\prime}=\left(L^{\prime}\right)^{\star}=\overline{\mathfrak{I}(L)}$ follow from

Lemma 7 and the equality $Z\left(\mathfrak{M}^{\prime}\right)=\{e\}$ follows from equalities $\mathfrak{M}=\mathfrak{M}^{\prime} \times M\left(L^{3}\right)$, $Z(\mathfrak{M})=M\left(L^{3}\right)$. This completes the proof of Theorem 1.

## 3 Normalizer condition

Let $M$ be a subset, $H$ be a subgroup of group $G$. The subgroup $N_{H}(M)$ $=\left\{h \mid h \in H, h^{-1} M h=M\right\}$ is called the normalizer of the set $M$ in the subgroup $H$ [8]. Now, constructively, we define the notion of normalizer for the subloops of CML. Let $H, K$, where $H \subseteq K$ be subloops of CML $L$. We define inductively the sequences of sets $\left\{P_{\alpha}\right\}$ and $\left\{D_{\alpha}\right\}$ as follows:
i) $P_{1}=\{x \in K \mid(H, H, x) \subseteq H\}$ and $D_{1}=\left\{x \in K \mid\left(H, x, P_{1}\right) \subseteq H\right\}$;
ii) for any ordinal $\alpha, P_{\alpha+1}=\left\{x \in K \mid\left(H, D_{\alpha}, x\right) \subseteq H\right\}$ and $D_{\alpha+1}=\{x \in$ $\left.K \mid\left(H, x, P_{\alpha+1}\right) \subseteq H\right\} ;$
iii) if $\alpha$ is a limit ordinal, $P_{\alpha}=\bigcap_{\beta<\alpha} P_{\beta}$ and $D_{\alpha}=\bigcup_{\beta<\alpha} D_{\beta}$.

Further, we will also denote the conditions of item ii) by ( $H, D_{\alpha}, \bar{P}_{\alpha+1}$ ) and $\left(H, \bar{D}_{\alpha+1}, P_{\alpha+1}\right)$ respectively. $H$ is a subloop of CML $L$, then from $(H, H, H) \subseteq H,(H, H, \bar{P})$ it follows that $H \subseteq P_{1}$, from $H \subseteq P_{1},\left(H, \bar{D}_{1}, P_{1}\right)$, $\left(H, H, \bar{P}_{1}\right)$ it follows that $H \subseteq D_{1}$, from $\left(H, H, \bar{P}_{1}\right),\left(H, D_{1}, \bar{P}_{2}\right), H \subseteq D_{1}$ it follows that $P_{1} \supseteq P_{2}$, from $\left(H, \bar{D}_{1}, P_{2}\right),\left(H, \bar{D}_{2}, P_{2}\right), P_{1} \supseteq P_{2}$ it follows that $D_{1} \subseteq D_{2}$. Further, let $\alpha$ be a non-limit ordinal and we suppose by inductive hypothesis that $D_{\alpha} \supseteq D_{\alpha+1}$ and $P_{\alpha} \subseteq P_{\alpha+1}$. Then from $D_{\alpha} \supseteq D_{\alpha+1}$, $\left(H, D_{\alpha}, \bar{P}_{\alpha+1}\right),\left(H, D_{\alpha+1}, \bar{P}_{\alpha+2}\right)$ it follows that $P_{\alpha+1} \subseteq P_{\alpha+2}$ and from $P_{\alpha+1} \subseteq P_{\alpha+2}$, $\left(H, \bar{D}_{\alpha+2}, P_{\alpha \alpha+1}\right),\left(H, \bar{D}_{\alpha+2}, P_{\alpha \alpha+2}\right)$ it follows that $D_{\alpha+1} \supseteq D_{\alpha+2}$. Hence, if consider also item iii), we get a sequence of subsets

$$
\begin{gather*}
P_{1} \supseteq P_{2} \supseteq \ldots \supseteq P_{\alpha} \supseteq \ldots \\
D_{1} \subseteq D_{2} \subseteq \ldots \subseteq D_{\alpha} \subseteq \ldots \tag{5}
\end{gather*}
$$

The construction process of subsets $P_{\alpha}, D_{\alpha}$ from (5) shall end with an ordinal number, whose cardinality does not exceed the cardinality of CML $K$ itself. We suppose that $P_{\alpha+1}=P_{\alpha+2}=\ldots$ From $\left(H, \bar{D}_{\alpha+1}, P_{\alpha+1}\right),\left(H, \bar{D}_{\alpha+2}, P_{\alpha+2}\right)$ it follows that $D_{\alpha+1}=D_{\alpha+2}$. Then from $\left(H, D_{\alpha+1}, \bar{P}_{\alpha+2}\right),\left(H, \bar{D}_{\alpha+2}, P_{\alpha+2}\right)$ it follows that $\left(H, \bar{D}_{\alpha+2}, \bar{P}_{\alpha+2}\right)$. We remind that the inscriptions $\bar{D}_{\alpha+2}, \bar{P}_{\alpha+2}$ denote the biggest subsets $D_{\alpha+2}$ and $P_{\alpha+2}$ such that the relation $\left(H, D_{\alpha+2}, P_{\alpha+2}\right) \subseteq H$ holds true. $H$ is a subloop of CML $L$, then from (3) it follows that $D_{\alpha+2}=P_{\alpha+2}$ and using (3), (4) it is easy to prove that $D_{\alpha+2}$ is a subloop of CML $L$. Hence $D_{\alpha+2}$ is the biggest (and the only) subloop of CML $K$ where by (2) $H$ is a normal subloop. By analogy with group theory the subloop $D_{\alpha}$ will be called the normalizer of subloop $H$ in subloop $K$ of CML $L$ and will be denoted by $N_{K}(H)$. If the subgroup where the normalizer is taken from is not indicated, it means that it is taken from the entire CML L. Consequently, from the construction of normalizer follows

Proposition 3. Let $H, L, K$, where $H \subseteq L \subseteq K$, be subloops of $C M L L$ and let $H$ be a normal subloop of $L$. Then $L \subseteq N_{K}(H)$.

The group theory contains studies of the group that satisfies the normalizer condition (see, for example, [8]). These are such groups, where every proper subgroup differs from its normalizer. A similar notion can be introduced for CML. We will say that a CML satisfies the normalizer condition or, in short, is an $N$-loop if every proper subloop differs from its normalizer.

The CML $L$ will be a $N$-loop if and only if an ascending subnormal system $\left\{H_{\alpha}\right\}$ passes through each subloop $H$ of $C M L L$.

Really, we denote $H_{0}=1, H_{1}=H$ (respect. $\mathfrak{N}_{0}=e, \mathfrak{N}_{1}=\mathfrak{N}$ ). Further, for non-limit $\alpha$ we take as $H_{\alpha}$ the normalizer of subloop $H_{\alpha-1}$, and for limit $\alpha H_{\alpha}$ will be the union of all $H_{\beta}$ for $\beta<\alpha$. This ascending subnormal system, obviously, reaches CML $L$ itself. Conversely, if all subloops of CML $L$ are contained in some ascending subnormal system, then all proper subloop will be normal in some bigger subloop, and, consequently, by Proposition 3, will differ from its normalizer.

Using this result it is easy to prove that all subloops and all quotient loops of $N$-loop will be $N$-loops themselves. Really, let $A$ be a subloop of $N$-loop $L$, and let $B$ be a subloop of $L$ such that $B \subseteq A$. By the aforementioned, an ascending subnormal system $\left\{B_{\alpha}\right\}$ passes through $B$. Then $\left\{B_{\alpha} \cap A\right\}$ after removing the repetitions will be an ascending subnormal system of $A$, passing through $B$. Hence $A$ will be an $N$-loop. The second statement is proved by analogy.

Theorem 2. If a CML $L$ with the Frattini subloop $\mathfrak{F}(L)$ satisfies the inequality $\mathfrak{F}(L) \neq L$ then it satisfies the normalizer condition.

Proof. As $\mathfrak{F}(L) \neq L$ then the CML $L$ has a maximal proper subloop. Let $H$ be an arbitrary proper subloop of CML $L$. If $H$ is a maximal subloop of $L$ then by [5] $H$ is normal in $L$. Hence $H \neq N_{L}(H)=L$. Let now the subloop $H$ be a non-maximal subloop. By Zorn's Lemma let $M$ be a maximal subloop of $L$ with respect to the property $H \subseteq M$ and let $a \notin L \backslash M$. We suppose that $a^{3}=1$. Let $K=<H, a>$. $M$ is a maximal proper subloop of $L$, then by [5] the subloop $M$ is normal in $L$. Let $\varphi$ be a restriction on $K$ of homomorphism $L \rightarrow L / M$. Obviously, $\operatorname{Ker} \varphi=M \cap K$. As $a^{3}=1$ then $M \cap<a>=1$. Hence $K \backslash<a>=H$ and then $M \cap K=H$. Consequently, $H$ is a normal subloop of $K$, and as $H \neq K$ then by Proposition 1 $H \neq Z_{L}(H)$, as required.

Let now $a^{3} \neq 1$. By Lemma $1 a^{3} \in Z(L)$, hence $<a^{3}>$ is a normal subloop of $L$. Let $a^{3} \in H$. We denote $L /<a^{3}>=\bar{L}$. From $a^{3} \in M, a \notin M$ it follows that $\bar{M}$ is a maximal proper subloop of $\bar{L}$. Hence $\mathfrak{F}(\bar{L}) \neq \bar{L}$. Further, $\bar{a}^{3}=\overline{1}$, then by the previous cases $\bar{H} \neq N(\bar{H})$. As $a^{3} \in H$ and $a^{3} \in N(H)$ then the inverse images of $\bar{H}$ and $N(\bar{H})$ will be $H$ and $N(H)$ respectively. Hence from $\bar{H} \neq N(\bar{H})$ it follows that $H \neq N(H)$, as required.

If $a^{3} \notin H$, then $H \neq H<a^{3}>$. By (3) and Lemma 1 we get $\left(H, H<a^{3}>, H<a^{3}>\right)=(H, H, H) \subseteq H$. This means by Proposition 1 that $H<a^{3}>\subseteq N(H)$. Hence $H \neq N(H)$. This completes the proof of Theorem 2.

Any subloop of a $Z A$-loop is a $Z A$-loop. From Lemma 3 it follows that a nonassociative commutative Moufang $Z A$-loop has a non-trivial associative quotient
loop. Hence it differs from its associator subloop. Hence any commutative Moufang $Z A$-loop is a SD-loop.

Corollary 1. For a CML $L$ let $Z_{2}(L) \neq Z_{1}(L)$. In particular, let $L$ be a $Z A$-loop or a SD-loop. Then the CML $L$ satisfies the normalizer condition.

Proof. We suppose that $\mathfrak{F}(L)=L$. Then by Theorem $1 L=L^{\prime} \times Z(L), \mathfrak{F}\left(L^{\prime}\right)=L^{\prime}$, $Z\left(L^{\prime}\right)=\{1\}$. From here it follows that $Z_{2}(L)=Z_{1}(L)$. Contradiction. Hence $\mathfrak{F}(L) \neq L$ and by Theorem 2 the CML $L$ satisfies the normalizer condition, as required.

In [5] it is proved that CML $L$ is centrally nilpotent of class $n$ if and only if the group $\mathfrak{M}$ is nilpotent of class $2 n-1$. Then Corollary 1 for $\mathfrak{M}$ follows from the known result about subnormal subgroups of nilpotent group (see, for example,[8]).

Proposition 4. If $L$ is a centrally nilpotent CML of class $n$, then for any subloop $H \subseteq L$ (respect. subgroup $\mathfrak{N}$ of group $\mathfrak{M}$ ) the sequence of consecutive normalizers reaches $L$ (respect. $\mathfrak{M}$ ) not later that after $n$ (respect. $2 n-1$ ) steps.
Proof. Let (1) be the upper central series of CML $L$. We denote $H_{0}=H$, $H_{i+1}=N_{L}\left(H_{i}\right)$. It is sufficient to check that $Z_{i}(L) \subseteq H_{i}$. For $i=0$, this is obvious. We suppose that $Z_{i}(L) \subseteq H_{i}$. From the relation $Z_{i+1}(L) / Z_{i}(L)=Z\left(L / Z_{i}(L)\right.$ it follows that $\left(Z_{i+1}(L), L, L\right) \subseteq Z_{i}(L)$. In particular, $\left(Z_{i}(L), Z_{i+1}(L), Z_{i+1}(L)\right) \subseteq$ $Z_{i}(L)$. As $Z_{i}(L) \subseteq H_{i}$, then $\left(H_{i}, Z_{i+1}(L), Z_{i+1}(L)\right) \subseteq H_{i}$. But this means that $Z_{i+1}(L)$ normalizes $H_{i}$. Hence $Z_{i+1}(L) \subseteq H_{i+1}$. This completes the proof of Proposition 4.

Remark. Theorem 1 (see, also, Theorem 3) reveals a strong analogy between the Frattini subloops of CML and the Frattini subgroups of the multiplication groups of CML. However for the multiplication group of CML the statement, analogous to Theorem 2, is not true. In [5] there is an example of CML $G$ of exponent 3 , such that $G^{\prime} \neq G$ and $Z(G)=1$. By Proposition $2 \mathfrak{F}(G) \neq G$. Then by Proposition 1 $Z(\mathfrak{M})=e$ and by Lemma $6 \mathfrak{F}(M) \neq \mathfrak{M}$, where $\mathfrak{M}(G)$ denotes the multiplication group of $G$. In [6] J.D. H. Smith showed that no group with trivial centre and satisfying the normalizer condition can be the multiplication group of a quasigroup. Hence the multiplication group $\mathfrak{M}$ satisfies the inequality $\mathfrak{F}(\mathfrak{M}) \neq \mathfrak{M}$ but it does not satisfy the normalizer condition.

## 4 Divisible subgroups of multiplication group

We remind ([8] (respect.[2]) that the group (respect. CML) $G$ is called divisible or complete (by terminology of [3] radically complete) if the equality $x^{n}=a$ has at least one solution in $G$, for any number $n>0$ and any element $a \in G$.

Theorem 3. Any divisible subgroup $\mathfrak{N}$ of a multiplication group $\mathfrak{M}$ of a CML L is an abelian group and serves as a direct factor for $\mathfrak{M}$, i.e. $\mathfrak{M}=\mathfrak{N} \times \mathfrak{C}$ for a certain subgroup $\mathfrak{C}$ of $\mathfrak{M}$.

Proof. If $\mathfrak{F}(\mathfrak{M})=\mathfrak{M}$ then the statement follows from Theorem 1. Hence let $\mathfrak{F}(\mathfrak{M}) \neq$ $\mathfrak{M}$. Then $\mathfrak{M}$ has a maximal proper subgroups. The group $\mathfrak{M}$ is locally nilpotent [2], then the maximal proper subgroups of $\mathfrak{M}$ are normal in $\mathfrak{M}$ [8]. Let $\mathfrak{H}$ be a maximal proper subgroup of $\mathfrak{M}$ such that $\varrho \notin \mathfrak{H}$ for some $\varrho \in \mathfrak{N}$. We will consider two cases: $\varrho$ has a finite order and $\varrho$ has an infinite order.

Let the element $\varrho$ have a finite order $n$. Then the element $\alpha=\varrho^{n / p}$, where $p$ is a prime divisor of $n$, has the order $p$. The subgroup $\mathfrak{N}$ is divisible. Then there exists a sequence $\alpha=\alpha_{1}, \alpha_{2}, \ldots, \alpha_{k}, \ldots$ of elements in $\mathfrak{N}$ such that $\alpha_{1}^{p}=e, \alpha_{k+1}^{p}=\alpha_{k}$, where $e$ is the unit of $\mathfrak{M}$. From here it follows that $\alpha_{k}^{p^{k}}=e, k=1,2, \ldots$.

We denote by $\mathfrak{C}$ the subgroup of $\mathfrak{N}$ generated by $\alpha_{1}, \alpha_{2}, \ldots, \alpha_{k}, \ldots$ It is easy to prove that any element $\alpha \in \mathfrak{C}$ is a power of some generator $\alpha_{k}$, i.e. $\alpha=\alpha_{k}^{n}$, and the cyclic groups $<\alpha_{k}>$ form a sequence

$$
e \subset<\alpha_{1}>\subset<\alpha_{2}>\subset \ldots \subset<\alpha_{k}>\subset \ldots .
$$

We prove that $\mathfrak{C} \cap \mathfrak{H}=e . \quad<\alpha_{1}>$ is a cyclic group of order $p$ and $\alpha_{1} \notin \mathfrak{H}$. Then $\left\langle\alpha_{1}\right\rangle \cap \mathfrak{H}=e$. We suppose that $\left\langle\alpha_{k}\right\rangle \cap \mathfrak{H}=e$. We have $\left\langle\alpha_{k+1}\right\rangle=$ $\left\{\alpha_{k+1}, \alpha_{k+1}^{p}, \ldots, \alpha_{k+1}^{p^{k+1}-1}\right\} \cup\left\langle\alpha_{k}\right\rangle$. We suppose that $\alpha_{k+1}^{n} \in \mathfrak{H}\left(n=1,2, \ldots, p^{k+1}-\right.$ 1). Then $\left(\alpha_{k+1}^{n}\right)^{p} \in \mathfrak{H}$. But $\left(\alpha_{k+1}^{n}\right)^{p}=\left(\alpha_{k+1}^{p}\right)^{n}=\alpha_{k}^{n}$. Hence $\alpha_{k}^{n} \in \mathfrak{H}$. But this contradicts the supposition $<\alpha_{k}>\cap \mathfrak{H}=e$. Hence $<\alpha_{k+1}>\cap \mathfrak{H}=e$ and, consequently, $\mathfrak{C} \cap \mathfrak{H}=e$. Let $\mathfrak{M}^{\prime}$ denote the commutator subgroup of group $\mathfrak{M}$. By Lemma $4 \mathfrak{M}^{\prime} \subseteq \mathfrak{H}$. Then $\mathfrak{M}^{\prime} \cap \mathfrak{C}=e, \mathfrak{C}^{\prime}=e$, hence $\mathfrak{C}$ is an abelian group. More concretely, $\mathfrak{C}$ is isomorphic to a quasicyclic $p$-group. Further, the subgroup $\mathfrak{H}$ as maximal in $\mathfrak{M}$ is normal in $\mathfrak{M}$. Then from $\mathfrak{M}=\mathfrak{H C}, \mathfrak{H} \cap \mathfrak{C}=e$ it follows that $\mathfrak{C}$ is normal in $\mathfrak{M}$. Hence $\mathfrak{M}=\mathfrak{H} \times \mathfrak{C}$.

Let now $\varrho \in \mathfrak{N}$ be an element of infinite order. If $Z(\mathfrak{M})$ denotes the centre of $\mathfrak{M}$ then $\mathfrak{M} / Z(\mathfrak{M})$ is a locally finite 3 -group [5]. Hence $\varrho^{n} \in Z(\mathfrak{M})$ for some $n$. Let $\mathfrak{H}$ be a maximal subloop of $\mathfrak{M}$ such that $\varrho^{n} \notin \mathfrak{H}$. $\mathfrak{N}$ is a divisible group. Then there exists a sequence $\varrho^{n}=\alpha_{1}, \alpha_{2}, \ldots, \alpha_{k}, \ldots$ of elements in $\mathfrak{N}$ such that $\alpha_{k+1}^{k+1}=\alpha_{k}, k=1,2, \ldots$. We denote by $\mathfrak{Q}$ the subgroup of $\mathfrak{N}$, generated by $\varrho^{n}=\alpha_{1}, \alpha_{2}, \ldots, \alpha_{k}, \ldots$ As $\alpha_{1} \in Z(\mathfrak{M})$ then it is easy to see that $\mathfrak{Q} \subseteq Z(\mathfrak{M})$. Hence the subgroup $\mathfrak{Q}$ is normal in $\mathfrak{M}$. The subgroup $\mathfrak{Q}$ is without torsion. In [4] it is proved that the commutator subgroup of the multiplication group of any CML is a locally finite 3 -group. Then $\mathfrak{Q} \cap \mathfrak{M}^{\prime}=e$. From here it follows that $\mathfrak{Q}^{\prime}=e$, i.e. $\mathfrak{Q}$ is an abelian group. More concretely, $\mathfrak{Q}$ is isomorphic to the additive group of rationales.

Thus, in both cases in group $\mathfrak{M}$ there exists an abelian normal subgroup $\mathfrak{D} \subseteq \mathfrak{N}$, which is isomorphic to quasicyclic $p$-group or additive group of rationales such that $\mathfrak{M}=\mathfrak{H} \times \mathfrak{D}$. We will use this procedure of separating the divisible subgroup from $\mathfrak{N}$ as direct factor for defining the subgroups $\mathfrak{M}_{\beta}, \mathfrak{A}_{\beta}$ of group $\mathfrak{M}_{\beta-1}$.

Let $\mathfrak{M}_{0}=\mathfrak{M}, \mathfrak{M}_{1}=\mathfrak{H}, \mathfrak{D}_{1}=\mathfrak{D}$. For a non-limit ordinal $\beta$ inductively we define $\mathfrak{M}_{\beta-1}=\mathfrak{M}_{\beta} \times \mathfrak{D}_{\beta}$. We denote $\mathfrak{A}_{\beta}=\mathfrak{D}_{1} \times \mathfrak{D}_{2} \times \ldots \times \mathfrak{D}_{\beta}$. As $\mathfrak{D}_{1}, \mathfrak{D}_{2}, \ldots, \mathfrak{D}_{\beta} \subseteq \mathfrak{N}$ then $\mathfrak{A}_{\beta} \subseteq \mathfrak{N}$. Further we consider the sequences of subgroups

$$
\mathfrak{A}_{1} \subset \mathfrak{A}_{2} \subset \ldots \subset \mathfrak{A}_{\beta} \subset \ldots,
$$

$$
\mathfrak{M}_{1} \supset \mathfrak{M}_{2} \supset \ldots \supset \mathfrak{M}_{\beta} \supset \ldots, \beta<\alpha,
$$

where $\mathfrak{M}_{\beta-1}=\mathfrak{M}_{\beta} \times \mathfrak{D}_{\beta}$ if $\beta$ is a non-limit ordinal and $\mathfrak{A}_{\beta}=\cup_{\gamma<\beta} \mathfrak{A}_{\gamma}, \mathfrak{M}_{\beta}=$ $\cap_{\gamma<\beta} \mathfrak{M}_{\gamma}$ if $\beta$ is a limit ordinal.

It is clear that $\mathfrak{M}_{\beta}, \mathfrak{A}_{\beta}$ are normal subgroups of $\mathfrak{M}$. We prove that $\mathfrak{M}=\mathfrak{M}_{\beta} \times \mathfrak{A}_{\beta}$ for any $\beta$. If $\beta$ is a non-limit ordinal, then by induction $\mathfrak{M}=\mathfrak{M}_{1} \times \mathfrak{D}_{1}=\mathfrak{M}_{1} \times \mathfrak{A}_{1}=$ $\mathfrak{M}_{\beta-1} \times \mathfrak{A}_{\beta-1}=\mathfrak{M}_{\beta} \times \mathfrak{D}_{\beta} \times \mathfrak{A}_{\beta-1}=\mathfrak{M}_{\beta} \times \mathfrak{A}_{\beta}$. Hence $\mathfrak{M}=\mathfrak{M}_{\beta} \times \mathfrak{A}_{\beta}$.

Let now $\beta$ be a limit ordinal and let $e \neq \lambda \in \mathfrak{M}_{\beta} \cap \mathfrak{A}_{\beta}$. Then there exists a nonordinal $\delta<\beta$ such that $\lambda \in \mathfrak{A}_{\delta}$. From $\lambda \in \mathfrak{M}_{\beta}=\cap_{\gamma<\beta} \mathfrak{M}_{\gamma}$ it follows that $\lambda \in \mathfrak{M}_{\gamma}$ for all $\gamma<\beta$. But $\delta<\beta$. Then $\lambda \in \mathfrak{M}_{\delta} \cap \mathfrak{A}_{\delta}$. Contradiction. Hence $\mathfrak{M}_{\beta} \cap \mathfrak{A}_{\beta}=e$ and we may consider the direct product $\mathfrak{M}_{\beta} \times \mathfrak{A}_{\beta}$.

Let $\lambda \in \mathfrak{M} \backslash\left(\mathfrak{M}_{\beta} \times \mathfrak{A}_{\beta}\right)$. Then $\lambda \notin \mathfrak{M}_{\beta}, \lambda \notin \mathfrak{A}_{\beta}$, i.e. $\lambda \notin \cap_{\gamma<\beta} \mathfrak{M}_{\gamma}, \lambda \notin \cup_{\gamma<\beta} A_{\gamma}$. Hence $\lambda \notin \mathfrak{M}_{\gamma}$ for all $\gamma<\beta$ and from $\lambda \in \mathfrak{M}, \mathfrak{M}=\mathfrak{M}_{\gamma} \times \mathfrak{A}_{\gamma}$ it follows that $\lambda \in \cap_{\gamma<\beta} \mathfrak{A}_{\gamma}=\mathfrak{A}_{\beta}$. We wet a contradiction. Hence $\mathfrak{M}=\mathfrak{M}_{\beta} \times \mathfrak{A}_{\beta}$ for all $\beta$.

The process of inductive construction of $\mathfrak{A}_{\alpha}$ will end on the first number $\gamma$ for which $\mathfrak{A}_{\gamma}=\mathfrak{N}$. Consequently, $\mathfrak{M}=\mathfrak{M}_{\gamma} \times \mathfrak{N}$. This completes the proof of Theorem 3.

By Theorem 3 any multiplication group $\mathfrak{M}$ of CML contains a maximal divisible associative subloop $\mathfrak{D}$ and $\mathfrak{M}=\mathfrak{D} \times \mathfrak{R}$, where obviously $\mathfrak{R}$ is a reduced CML, meaning that it has no non-unitary divisible subgroups. Consequently, we obtain

Corollary 2. Any multiplication group $\mathfrak{M}$ of $C M L L$ is a direct product of a divisible abelian subgroup $\mathfrak{D}$ and a reduced subgroup $\mathfrak{R}$. The subgroup $\mathfrak{D}$ is uniquely defined, the subgroup $\mathfrak{R}$ is defined up to isomorphism.

Proof. Let us prove the last statement. As $\mathfrak{D}$ is the maximal divisible subgroup of the multiplication group $\mathfrak{M}$, then it is invariant with respect to the endomorphisms of the group $\mathfrak{M}$. Let $\mathfrak{M}=\mathfrak{D}^{\prime} \times \mathfrak{R}^{\prime}$, where $\mathfrak{D}^{\prime}$ is a divisible subgroup, and $\mathfrak{R}^{\prime}$ is a reduced subgroup of the group $\mathfrak{M}$. We denote by $\varphi, \psi$ the endomorphisms $\varphi: \mathfrak{M} \rightarrow \mathfrak{D}^{\prime}, \psi: \mathfrak{M} \rightarrow \mathfrak{R}^{\prime}$. As $\mathfrak{D}$ is invariant with respect to the endomorphisms of the group $\mathfrak{M}$, then $\varphi \mathfrak{D}$ and $\psi \mathfrak{D}$ are subgroups of the group $\mathfrak{M}$. It follows from the inclusions $\varphi \mathfrak{D} \subseteq \mathfrak{D}^{\prime}$ and $\psi \mathfrak{D} \subseteq \mathfrak{R}^{\prime}$ that $\varphi \mathfrak{D} \cap \psi \mathfrak{D}=1$. By Theorem $3 \mathfrak{D}$ is a abelian group, therefore $\varphi \mathfrak{D}, \psi \mathfrak{D}$ are normal in $\mathfrak{D}$. Then $d=\varphi d \cdot \psi d(d \in \mathfrak{D})$ gives $\mathfrak{D}=\varphi \mathfrak{D} \cdot \psi \mathfrak{D}$, so $\mathfrak{D}=\varphi \mathfrak{D} \times \psi \mathfrak{D}$. Obviously, $\varphi \mathfrak{D} \subseteq \mathfrak{D} \cap \mathfrak{D}^{\prime}, \psi \mathfrak{D} \subseteq \mathfrak{D} \cap \mathfrak{R}^{\prime}$, then $\varphi \mathfrak{D}=\mathfrak{D} \cap \mathfrak{D}^{\prime}, \psi \mathfrak{D}=\mathfrak{D} \cap \mathfrak{R}^{\prime}$. Hence $\mathfrak{D}=\left(\mathfrak{D} \cap \mathfrak{D}^{\prime}\right) \times\left(\mathfrak{D} \cap \mathfrak{R}^{\prime}\right)$. But $\mathfrak{D} \cap \mathfrak{R}^{\prime}=1$ as a direct factor of a divisible group of a reduced group. Therefore, $\mathfrak{D} \cap \mathfrak{D}^{\prime} \subseteq \mathfrak{D}, \mathfrak{D} \subseteq \mathfrak{D}^{\prime}$, i.e. $\mathfrak{D}=\mathfrak{D}^{\prime}$. This completes the proof of Corollary 2 .

## References

[1] Ursu V. I., Covalschi A. Quasivarities of Commutative Solvable Moufang Loops. Bul. Acad. Ştiinţe Repub. Moldova, Mat., 2007, No. 2(54), 118-124.
[2] Sandu N. I. The commutative Moufang loops with minimum conditions for subloops I. Bul. Acad. Ştiinţe Repub. Moldova, Mat., 2003, No. 3(43), 25-40.
[3] Chernikov S. N. Groups with Features of Subgroup Systems. Nauka, Moscow, 1980 (in Russian).
[4] Sandu N. I. On Frattini subloops and normalizers of commutative Moufang loops. ArXiv 0804.3964v1.
[5] Bruck R. H. A survey of binary systems. Springer Verlag, Berlin-Heidelberg, 1958.
[6] Chein O., Pflugfelder H. O., Smith J. D. H. Quasigroups and Loops: Theory and applications. Helderman Verlag, Berlin, 1990.
[7] Sandu N. I. About Centrally Nilpotent Commutative Moufang Loops. Quasigroups and Loops: Mat. issled., vyp. 51, Kishinev, 1979, 145-155 (in Russian).
[8] Kargapolov M. I., Merzlyakov Iu. I. Fondations of the theory of groups. Nauka, Moscow, 1972 (in Russian).
[9] Sandu N. I. Medially nilpotent distributive quasigroups and CH-quasigroups. Sibirskii. mat. jurnal, 1987, 2, 159-170 (in Russian).
[10] Fuchs L. Infinite abelian groups, Vol. 1, Mir, Moscow,1974 (in Russian).

[^2]
# On a Method for Estimation of Risk Premiums Loaded by a Fraction of the Variance of the Risk 

Virginia Atanasiu


#### Abstract

In this paper we have obtained linear approximations which are unbiased estimates for the expected value part, respectively for the variance part and finally for the fluctuation part of the loading from the variance premium, using the greatest accuracy theory. The article provides a means to approximate the separate parts of the variance loaded premium by linear non-homogeneous credibility estimators. Apart from the purpose of this paper, which is to simply add "credibility" like estimators for the separate parts of the variance premium, we have presented some basic theorems from statistics and some basic results on finding estimators with minimal mean squared error from probability theory. The fact that it is based on complicated mathematics, involving conditional expectations, needs not bother the user more than it does when he applies statistical tools like, discriminating analysis and scoring models.


Mathematics subject classification: 62P05.
Keywords and phrases: The linear estimator, the Esscher premium, the variance premium.

## Introduction

It is an original paper which describes techniques for estimating premiums for risks, containing a fraction of the variance of the risk as a loading on the net risk premium. An approach "in this sense" is to consider the variance premium. The problem under discussion is to get linear approximations, which are unbiased estimates for the expected value part, variance part, fluctuation part, i.e. for the separate parts of the variance premium, using the classical model of Bühlmann and the credibility for the Esscher premiums. The present article contains a method to estimate risk premiums loaded by a fraction of the variance of the risk, as opposed to the net premiums studied thus far in the credibility theory.

The first section shows that the Esscher premium approaches the variance principle and that this premium is derived as an optimal estimator minimizing a suitable loss function. In the first section it is shown that the Esscher premium can be used as an approximation to the variance loaded premium, by truncating the development of a power series. Also, the approach of the problem of Esscher premium, followed in the first section is to consider the best linear credibility estimator which minimizes the exponentially weighted squared error loss function. The second section analyses and presents the linear non-homogeneous credibility estimators for the separate parts of the variance premium.

[^3]It turns out that the linear credibility approximations for each of the parts in the variance premium to coincide with the unbiased estimates for the expected value part, the variance part and the fluctuation part from the variance premium.

The approach of the problem of loaded premiums, followed in the second section is to simply add credibility - like estimators for the separate parts of the variance premium.

## 1 Techniques for estimating premiums for risks, containing a fraction of the variance of the risk as a loading on the net risk premium

### 1.1 The classical model of Bühlmann

Consider a portfolio of contracts $j=1, \ldots, k$ satisfying the constraints $\left(B_{1}\right)$ and $\left(B_{2}\right)$. The index contract $j$ is a random vector consisting of the structural variables $\theta_{j}$ and the observable variables: $X_{j 1}, \ldots X_{j t}$, where $j=1, \ldots, k$.
$\left(B_{1}\right) E\left[X_{j r} \mid \theta_{j}\right]=\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)$ - the net premium for a contract with risk parameter $\theta_{j^{-}}, \operatorname{Cov}\left[\underline{X}_{j} \mid \theta_{j}\right]=\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right) I^{(t, t)}, j=1, \ldots, k$, and:
$\left(B_{2}\right)$ the contracts $j=1, \ldots, k$ are independent, the variables $\theta_{1}, \ldots, \theta_{k}$ are identically distributed, and the observations $X_{j r}$ have finite variance, then the optimal non-homogeneous linear estimators $\hat{\mu}\left(\theta_{j}\right)$ for $\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right), j=1, \ldots, k$, in the least squares sense read: $\hat{\mu}\left(\theta_{j}\right)=(1-z) m+z M_{j}$, where $M_{j}=\frac{1}{t} \sum_{s=1}^{t} X_{j s}$ denotes the individual estimator for $\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)$. The resulting credibility factor $z$ which appears in the credibility adjusted estimator $\hat{\mu}\left(\theta_{j}\right)$ is found as: $z=a t /\left(s^{2}+a t\right)$, with the structural parameters $m, a$ and $s^{2}$ as defined by the following formulae:

$$
m=E\left[X_{j r}\right]=E\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right], a=\operatorname{Var}\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right], s^{2}=E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right], j=1, \ldots, k .
$$

Here the identity or unit matrix $I$ denotes a matrix with unities on the diagonal and zeros elsewhere.

### 1.2 The credibility for the Esscher premiums

## Minimizing weighted mean squared error

When $X$ and $Y$ are two random variables, and $Y$ must be estimated using a function $g(X)$ of $X$, the choice yielding the minimal weighted mean squared error $E\left[(Y-g(X))^{2} e^{h Y}\right]$ is the quantity:

$$
E\left[Y e^{h Y} \mid X\right] / E\left[e^{h Y} \mid X\right] .
$$

Indeed:

$$
\begin{gathered}
E\left[(Y-g(X))^{2} e^{h Y}\right]=E\left\{E\left[(Y-g(X))^{2} e^{h Y} \mid X\right]\right\}= \\
=\int E\left[(Y-g(x))^{2} e^{h Y} \mid X=x\right] \cdot d F_{X}(x) .
\end{gathered}
$$

For a fixed $x$, the integrand can be written as: $E\left[(Z-p)^{2} e^{h Z}\right]$, with $p=g(x)$ and $Z$ distributed as $Y$, given $X=x(Z \stackrel{(P)}{\equiv}[Y \mid(X=x)])$. This quadratic form in $p$ is minimized taking $p=E\left[Z e^{h Z}\right] / E\left[e^{h Z}\right]$ or what is the same $g(x)=E\left[Y e^{h Y} \mid X=\right.$ $=x] / E\left[e^{h Y} \mid X=x\right]$.

Indeed:

$$
\varphi(p) \stackrel{n o t}{=} E\left[(Z-p)^{2} e^{h Z}\right]=E\left(Z^{2} e^{h Z}\right)+p^{2} E\left(e^{h Z}\right)-2 p E\left(Z e^{h Z}\right),
$$

so $\varphi(p)$ is the following quadratic form in $p: E\left[(Z-p)^{2} e^{h Z}\right]$. We have to solve the following minimization problem: $\operatorname{Min}_{p} \varphi(p)$. Since this problem is the minimum of a positive definite quadratic form, it suffices to find a solution with the first derivative equal to zero. Taking the first derivative with respect to $p$, we get the equation: $2 p E\left(e^{h Z}\right)-2 E\left(Z e^{h Z}\right)=0$. So: $p=E\left(Z e^{h Z}\right) / E\left(e^{h Z}\right)$, because: $\varphi^{\prime \prime}(p)=2 E\left(e^{h Z}\right)>$ 0 . If the integrand is chosen minimal for each $x$, the integral over all $x$ is minimized, too.
Definition. The quantity $E\left[Y e^{h Y} \mid X\right] / E\left[e^{h Y} \mid X\right]$, denoted by $H[Y \mid X]$ and which minimizes the weighted mean squared error $E\left[(Y-g(X))^{2} e^{h Y}\right]$ in the above theoretical result, entitled "Minimizing weighted mean squared error" is called the Esscher premium for $Y$, given $X$.

Applying the formula $H[Y \mid X]=E\left[Y e^{h Y} \mid X\right] / E\left[e^{h Y} \mid X\right]$ to $Y=X_{t+1}, j$ and $X=\underline{X}_{j}=\left(X_{j 1}, \ldots, X_{j t}\right)^{\prime}$, we see that the best risk premium - in the sense of minimal weighted mean squared error - to charge for period $(t+1)$ is the Esscher premium for $X_{t+1, j}$, given $\underline{X}_{j}=\left(X_{j 1}, X_{j 2}, \ldots, X_{j t}\right)^{\prime}$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
H\left[X_{t+1, j} \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right] \stackrel{\text { not }}{=} g\left(X_{j}\right)=E\left[X_{t+1, j} e^{h X_{t+1, j}} \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right] / E\left[e^{h X_{t+1, j}} \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right] . \tag{1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Apart from the optimal credibility result (1.1) for this situation we can obtain the Esscher premium as an optimal estimator minimizing a suitable loss function.

The linear credibility formula for exponentially weighted squared error loss function requires not just the knowledge of a few natural structure parameters, but it is necessary that for the structure function some values of the moment generating function are known.

This is why the less refined approach followed in Section 2, is more useful in practice.

## 2 The credibility for the variance premiums

For a small $h$, the optimal credibility estimated for the variance loaded premium can be approximated as:

$$
\begin{align*}
& g\left(X_{j}\right) \cong\left(E\left[X_{t+1, j} \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right]+h E\left[X_{t+1, j}^{2} \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right]+O\left(h^{2}\right)\right) /\left(1+h E\left[X_{t+1, j} \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right]+O\left(h^{2}\right)\right) \cong \\
& \approx\left(E\left[X_{t+1, j} \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right]+h E\left[X_{t+1, j}^{2} \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right]+O\left(h^{2}\right)\right)\left(1-h E\left[X_{t+1, j} \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right]+O\left(h^{2}\right)\right)= \\
& =E\left[X_{t+1, j} \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right]+h \operatorname{Var}\left[X_{t+1, j} \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right]+O\left(h^{2}\right) \cong E\left[X_{t+1, j} \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right]+  \tag{2.1}\\
& +h \operatorname{Var}\left[X_{t+1, j} \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right]=E\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right) \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right]+h\left\{E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right) \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right]+\operatorname{Var}\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right) \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right\}\right.
\end{align*}
$$

approximating numerator and denominator of $g\left(X_{j}\right)$ up to the first order in $h$.
The purpose of this section is to get linear approximations for each of the terms in the right-hand side. We will derive unbiased estimates for the:

$$
\begin{cases}\text { expected value part } & E\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right) \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right]  \tag{2.2}\\ \text { variance part } & E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right) \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right] \\ \text { fluctuation part } & \operatorname{Var}\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right) \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right]\end{cases}
$$

Remark. Another problem appears if we want to find an estimate for the random variable:

$$
p(\theta):=\mu(\theta)+\alpha \sigma^{2}(\theta) .
$$

Minimizing the squared error would lead to the following credibility estimator:

$$
\begin{equation*}
E[p(\theta) \mid \underline{X}]=E[\mu(\theta) \mid \underline{X}]+\alpha E\left[\sigma^{2}(\theta) \mid \underline{X}\right], \tag{2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

without the fluctuation part, because there is the following basic result on finding estimators with minimal mean squared error.

## Minimizing mean squared error for conditional distributions

When $X$ and $Y$ are random variables, the function $g(\cdot)$ of $X$ estimating $Y$ with minimal mean squared error is:

$$
g^{*}(X)=E[Y \mid X] .
$$

Applying this theorem to $Y=p(\theta)$ and $X=\underline{X}=\left(X_{1}, \ldots, X_{t}\right)^{\prime}$ we obtain that the verification of the equality (2.5) is readily performed.

One might argue that this premium is more reasonable, since the policyholder, having himself a fixed though unknown risk parameter, should not pay for the uncertainty concerning his own risk parameter, only for the variation of his claims.

### 2.1 The main results of this paper

Here and as follows we present the main results leaving the detailed calculation to the reader.

## A) An approximation for the expected value part:

The expected value part has been dealt with in Subsection 1.1. We recall the result:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\mu}\left(\theta_{j}\right)=(1-z) m+z M_{j} \tag{2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
z=a t /\left(s^{2}+a t\right), \quad M_{j}=\frac{1}{t} \sum_{r=1}^{t} X_{j r}, \quad a=\operatorname{Var}\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right], \quad s^{2}=E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right], \quad(j=\overline{1, k})
$$

(for more details, see [5] or [6]). One could approximate the expected value part by its best linear non-homogeneous credibility estimator (2.6).

## B) An approximation of the fluctuation part:

Next we consider the fluctuation part:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Var}\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right) \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right] \stackrel{\operatorname{def}}{=} E\left\{\left(\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)-E\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right) \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right]\right)^{2} \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right\} . \tag{2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

It is difficult to estimate this expression because of the appearance of $E\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right) \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right]$.
However, one could approximate this expectation by its best linear nonhomogeneous credibility estimator (2.6), and try to estimate:

$$
\begin{equation*}
E\left\{\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)-(1-z) m-z M_{j}\right]^{2} \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right\} \tag{2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

(see (2.6)), where $z=a t /\left(s^{2}+a t\right)$.
To obtain an approximation for the fluctuation part, this quantity is averaged once more over the entire collective (the averaging is representative for the conditioned variance, because:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \operatorname{Var}\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right) \mid \underline{X_{j}}\right] \stackrel{(2.7)}{=} E\left\{\left(\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)-E\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right) \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right]\right)^{2} \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right\} \\
& \left.\stackrel{(2.6)}{=} E\left\{\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)-(1-z) m-z M_{j}\right]^{2} \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right\}\right): \\
& E\left[E\left\{\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)-(1-z) m-z M_{j}\right]^{2} \mid \underline{X_{j}}\right\}\right]=E\left[E\left\{\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)-m-z\left(M_{j}-m\right)\right]^{2} \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right\}\right]= \\
& =E\left\{\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)-m-z\left(M_{j}-m\right)\right]^{2}\right\}=E\left[\mu^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)+m^{2}+z^{2}\left(M_{j}-m\right)^{2}-2 m \mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)+\right. \\
& \left.+2 m z\left(M_{j}-m\right)-2 \mu\left(\theta_{j}\right) z\left(M_{j}-m\right)\right]=E\left[\mu^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]+m^{2}+z^{2} E\left[\left(M_{j}-m\right)^{2}\right]- \\
& -2 m E\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]+2 m z E\left[\left(M_{j}-m\right)\right]-2 z E\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)\left(M_{j}-m\right)\right]=E\left[\mu^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]+m^{2}+ \\
& +z^{2} E\left\{\left[M_{j}-E\left(M_{j}\right)\right]^{2}\right\}-2 m \cdot m-2 z E\left\{\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)-m\right]\left[M_{j}-m\right]\right\}=E\left[\mu^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]-\quad(2  \tag{2.9}\\
& -m^{2}+z^{2} \operatorname{Var}\left(M_{j}\right)-2 z E\left\{\left(\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)-E\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]\left[M_{j}-E\left(M_{j}\right)\right]\right\}=E\left[\mu^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]-\right. \\
& -E^{2}\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]+z^{2} \operatorname{Var}\left(M_{j}\right)-2 z \operatorname{Cov}\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right), M_{j}\right]=\operatorname{Var}\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]+z^{2} \operatorname{Var}\left(M_{j}\right)- \\
& -2 z \operatorname{Cov}\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right), M_{j}\right]=\operatorname{Var}\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]-2 z \operatorname{Cov}\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right), M_{j}\right]+z^{2} \operatorname{Var}\left(M_{j}\right)= \\
& =a-2 z a+z^{2}\left(a+s^{2} / t\right)=a\left(1-2 z+z^{2}\right)+z^{2} s^{2} / t=a(1-z)^{2}+z^{2} s^{2} / t,
\end{align*}
$$

because:

$$
\begin{gather*}
E\left(M_{j}\right)=m  \tag{2.10}\\
E\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]=E\left[E\left(X_{j r} \mid \theta_{j}\right)\right]=E\left(X_{j r}\right)  \tag{2.11}\\
\operatorname{Var}\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]=a \tag{2.12}
\end{gather*}
$$

(see the definition of the structure parameter $a$ ).

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Cov}\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right), M_{j}\right]=\frac{1}{t} \sum_{r=1}^{t} \operatorname{Cov}\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right), X_{j r}\right]=\frac{1}{t} \sum_{r=1}^{t} a=\frac{1}{t} t a=a, \tag{2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \operatorname{Var}\left(M_{j}\right)=\operatorname{Cov}\left(M_{j}, M_{j}\right)=\frac{1}{t^{2}} \sum_{r, r^{\prime}} \operatorname{Cov}\left(X_{j r}, X_{j r^{\prime}}\right)=\frac{1}{t^{2}} \sum_{r, r^{\prime}}\left(a+\delta_{r r^{\prime}} s^{2}\right)= \\
& =\frac{1}{t^{2}} \sum_{r}\left[\left(a+\delta_{r r} s^{2}\right)+\sum_{r^{\prime}, r^{\prime} \neq r}\left(a+\delta_{r r^{\prime}} s^{2}\right)\right]=\frac{1}{t^{2}} \sum_{r=1}^{t}\left[\left(a+s^{2}\right)+(t-1) a\right]=(2.14) \\
& =\frac{1}{t^{2}} \sum_{r=1}^{t}\left(s^{2}+a t\right)=\frac{t\left(s^{2}+a t\right)}{t^{2}}=\frac{s^{2}+a t}{t}=a+\frac{s^{2}}{t} .
\end{aligned}
$$

But inserting the value of the credibility factor $z$ in the right hand side of (2.9) shows that it equals $(1-z) a$, so:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \operatorname{Var}\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right) \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right] \cong E\left[E\left\{\left[\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)-(1-z) m-z M_{j}\right]^{2} \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right\}\right]= \\
& =a(1-z)^{2}+\frac{z^{2} s^{2}}{t}=a\left(1-\frac{a t}{a t+s^{2}}\right)^{2}+\frac{s^{2}}{t} \cdot \frac{a^{2} t^{2}}{\left(a t+s^{2}\right)^{2}}=  \tag{2.15}\\
& =\frac{a s^{4}+a^{2} s^{2} t}{\left(a t+s^{2}\right)^{2}}=\frac{a s^{2}\left(s^{2}+a t\right)}{\left(a t+s^{2}\right)^{2}}=\frac{a s^{2}}{a t+s^{2}}=a(1-z)=(1-z) a,
\end{align*}
$$

## C) An approximation for the variance part:

For the variance part, there is in analogy with the expected value part, $E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right) \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right]$ that is approximated as a non-homogeneous linear combination:

$$
\begin{equation*}
E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right) \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right] \cong c_{0}+c_{1} S_{j}^{2} \tag{2.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{j}^{2}=\sum_{s=1}^{t}\left(X_{j s}-\bar{X}_{j}\right)^{2} /(t-1) . \tag{2.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

The following distance will be minimized:

$$
\begin{equation*}
E\left\{\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)-c_{0}-c_{1} S_{j}^{2}\right]^{2}\right\} \tag{2.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

So, for each $j=\overline{1, k}$ we have to solve the following minimization problem:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Min}_{c_{0}, c_{1}} E\left\{\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)-c_{0}-c_{1} S_{j}^{2}\right]^{2}\right\} . \tag{2.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

As (2.19) is the minimum of a positive definitive quadratic form, it is enough to find a solution with all partial derivates equal to zero. Taking the partial derivative with respect to $c_{0}$ results in:

$$
\begin{equation*}
c_{0}=E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]\left(1-c_{1}\right), \tag{2.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

because if:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& f\left(c_{0}, c_{1}\right) \stackrel{\text { not. }}{=} E\left\{\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)-c_{0}-c_{1} S_{j}^{2}\right]^{2}\right\}=E\left\{\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]^{2}\right\}+c_{0}^{2}+c_{1}^{2} E\left[\left(S_{j}^{2}\right)^{2}\right]- \\
& -2 c_{0} E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]+2 c_{0} c_{1} E\left(S_{j}^{2}\right)-2 c_{1} E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right) S_{j}^{2}\right],
\end{aligned}
$$

then $\frac{\partial f}{\partial c_{0}}=0$ implies: $2 c_{0}-2 E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]+2 c_{1} E\left(S_{j}^{2}\right)=0$, that is the verification of the equality (2.20) that is readily performed (see (2.24)). Inserting the result (2.20) in (2.19) we obtain:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Min}_{c_{1}} E\left\{\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)-E\left(\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right)\left(1-c_{1}\right)-c_{1} S_{j}^{2}\right]^{2}\right\} \tag{2.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

Taking the derivative with respect to $c_{1}$, gives:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Cov}\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right), S_{j}^{2}\right]=c_{1} \operatorname{Cov}\left[S_{j}^{2}, S_{j}^{2}\right] \tag{2.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

because if:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& f\left(c_{1}\right) \stackrel{\text { not. }}{=} E\left\{\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)-E\left(\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right)\left(1-c_{1}\right)-c_{1} S_{j}^{2}\right]^{2}\right\}=E\left\{\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]^{2}+E^{2}\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right] .\right. \\
& \cdot\left(1-c_{1}\right)^{2}+c_{1}^{2}\left(S_{j}^{2}\right)^{2}-2 \sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right) E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]\left(1-c_{1}\right)-2 \sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right) c_{1} S_{j}^{2}+ \\
& \left.+2 E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]\left(1-c_{1}\right) c_{1} S_{j}^{2}\right\}=E\left\{\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]^{2}\right\}+E^{2}\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]\left(1-c_{1}\right)^{2}+c_{1}^{2} E\left[\left(S_{j}^{2}\right)^{2}\right]- \\
& -2 E^{2}\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]\left(1-c_{1}\right)-2 c_{1} E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right) S_{j}^{2}\right]+2 E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]\left(1-c_{1}\right) c_{1} E\left(S_{j}^{2}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

then $\frac{\partial f}{\partial c_{1}}=0$ implies:

$$
\begin{gathered}
-2 E^{2}\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]\left(1-c_{1}\right)+2 c_{1} E\left[\left(S_{j}^{2}\right)^{2}\right]+2 E^{2}\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]-2 E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right) S_{j}^{2}\right]+ \\
+2 E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right] E\left(S_{j}^{2}\right) \cdot\left(1-2 c_{1}\right)=0,
\end{gathered}
$$

that is:

$$
\begin{align*}
-E^{2}\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right] & +c_{1} E^{2}\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]+c_{1} E\left[\left(S_{j}^{2}\right)^{2}\right]+E^{2}\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]-E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right) S_{j}^{2}\right]+ \\
& +E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right] E\left(S_{j}^{2}\right)-2 E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right] E\left(S_{j}^{2}\right) c_{1}=0 . \tag{2.23}
\end{align*}
$$

But

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)=E\left(S_{j}^{2} \mid \theta_{j}\right) \quad \text { and so } \quad E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]=E\left[E\left(S_{j}^{2} \mid \theta_{j}\right)\right]=E\left(S_{j}^{2}\right) . \tag{2.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now after plugging (2.24) in (2.23) we obtain:

$$
E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right) S_{j}^{2}\right]-E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right] E\left(S_{j}^{2}\right)=c_{1}\left\{E\left[\left(S_{j}^{2}\right)^{2}\right]-E^{2}\left(S_{j}^{2}\right)\right\}
$$

that is

$$
\operatorname{Cov}\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right), S_{j}^{2}\right]=c_{1} \operatorname{Cov}\left(S_{j}^{2}, S_{j}^{2}\right), \quad \text { or } \quad \operatorname{Cov}\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right), S_{j}^{2}\right]=c_{1} \operatorname{Var}\left(S_{j}^{2}\right)
$$

and so the verification of the equality (2.22) is readily performed. But:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \operatorname{Cov}\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right), S_{j}^{2}\right]=E\left\{\operatorname{Cov}\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right), S_{j}^{2} \mid \theta_{j}\right]\right\}+\operatorname{Cov}\left\{E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right) \mid \theta_{j}\right], E\left(S_{j}^{2} \mid \theta_{j}\right)\right\}= \\
& =E\left\{E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right) S_{j}^{2} \mid \theta_{j}\right]-E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right) \mid \theta_{j}\right] E\left(S_{j}^{2} \mid \theta_{j}\right)\right\}+\operatorname{Cov}\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right), \sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]=  \tag{2.25}\\
& =E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right) E\left(S_{j}^{2} \mid \theta_{j}\right)-\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right) \sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]+\operatorname{Var}\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]=E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right) \sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)-\right. \\
& \left.-\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right) \sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]+\operatorname{Var}\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]=\operatorname{Var}\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right],
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Var}\left(S_{j}^{2}\right)=\operatorname{Var}\left[E\left(S_{j}^{2} \mid \theta_{j}\right)\right]+E\left[\operatorname{Var}\left(S_{j}^{2} \mid \theta_{j}\right)\right]=\operatorname{Var}\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]+E\left[\operatorname{Var}\left(S_{j}^{2} \mid \theta_{j}\right)\right] \tag{2.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

Inserting (2.25) and (2.26) in (2.22), the value of $c_{1}$ follows as:

$$
\begin{equation*}
c_{1}=\operatorname{Var}\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right] /\left\{\operatorname{Var}\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]+E\left[\operatorname{Var}\left(S_{j}^{2} \mid \theta_{j}\right)\right]\right\} \tag{2.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

We have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Var}\left(S_{j}^{2} \mid \theta_{j}\right)=2 \sigma^{4}\left(\theta_{j}\right) /(t-1)+O\left(t^{-2}\right) \cong 2 \sigma^{4}\left(\theta_{j}\right) /(t-1) \tag{2.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

for large values of $t$, and under the assumption of normality we get:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mu_{4}\left(\theta_{j}\right)=3 \sigma^{4}\left(\theta_{j}\right) \tag{2.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

because from statistics we recall some basic theorems:
(I) Suppose that $X$ is a random variable, with $\operatorname{Normal}\left(\mu, \sigma^{2}\right)$ distribution and in addition for all $r \in \mathbf{N}$ :

$$
\mu_{2 r}=E\left[(X-\mu)^{2 r}\right]
$$

then:

$$
\mu_{2 r}=\frac{(2 r)!}{2^{r} r!} \sigma^{2 r}
$$

(II) Suppose that $X_{1}, X_{2}, \ldots, X_{n}$ are independent random variables with the same expectations $\mu$ and the variance $\sigma^{2}$, and in addition for each $r$ :

$$
\mu_{4}=E\left[\left(X_{r}-\mu\right)^{4}\right]
$$

Let $\tilde{S}^{2}$ be defined as: $\tilde{S}^{2}=\frac{1}{n-1} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(X_{i}-\bar{X}\right)^{2}$ the sample variance, where $\bar{X}$ is the sample mean of $n$ i.i.d. random variables $X_{1}, X_{2}, \ldots, X_{n}$, that is:

$$
\bar{X}=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} X_{i}
$$

Then the following relation is valid:

$$
\operatorname{Var}\left(\tilde{S}^{2}\right)=\frac{1}{n}\left(\mu_{4}-\frac{n-3}{n-1} \sigma^{4}\right)
$$

Here $\left(X_{j s} \mid \theta_{j}\right), s=\overline{1, t}$ are $n$ i.i.d. random variables, with: $E\left(X_{j s} \mid \theta_{j}\right)=\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)$, $\operatorname{Var}\left(X_{j s} \mid \theta_{j}\right)=\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)$ and $E\left\{\left[X_{j s}-E\left(X_{j s} \mid \theta_{j}\right)\right]^{4} \mid \theta_{j}\right\}=\mu_{4}\left(\theta_{j}\right)$ for all $s=\overline{1, t}$.

Let $j$ be fixed. Under the assumption of normality we get: $\left(X_{j s} \mid \theta_{j}\right) \in$ $N\left(\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right), \sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right)$ for all $s=\overline{1, t}$. Applying result (I) to $X=\left(X_{j s} \mid \theta_{j}\right)$, for all $s=\overline{1, t}$ and $r=2$ we have:

$$
\mu_{4}\left(\theta_{j}\right)=\frac{(2 \cdot 2)!}{2^{2} \cdot 2!}\left(\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right)^{2}=3 \sigma^{4}\left(\theta_{j}\right)
$$

So the verification of the equality (2.29) is readily performed. Applying result (II) to $\tilde{S}^{2}=\left(S_{j}^{2} \mid \theta_{j}\right)$ we obtain:

$$
\operatorname{Var}\left(S_{j}^{2} \mid \theta_{j}\right)=\frac{1}{t}\left[\mu_{4}\left(\theta_{j}\right)-\frac{t-3}{t-1} \sigma^{4}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]=\frac{1}{t}\left[3 \sigma^{4}\left(\theta_{j}\right)-\frac{t-3}{t-1} \sigma^{4}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]=
$$

$$
=\frac{1}{t} \cdot \frac{3(t-1)-t+3}{t-1} \cdot \sigma^{4}\left(\theta_{j}\right)=\frac{2 t}{t(t-1)} \sigma^{4}\left(\theta_{j}\right)=\frac{2 \sigma^{4}\left(\theta_{j}\right)}{t-1} .
$$

So the verification of the equality (2.28) is already performed.
Let $a^{*}=\operatorname{Var}\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right], s^{2 *}=E\left[\sigma^{4}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]$, then we obtain for large values of $t$ the following approximation:
$c_{1} \stackrel{(2.27)}{=} a^{*} /\left\{a^{*}+E\left[\operatorname{Var}\left(S_{j}^{2} \mid \theta_{j}\right)\right]\right\} \stackrel{(2.28)}{=} a^{*} /\left\{a^{*}+2 E\left[\sigma^{4}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right] /(t-1)\right\}=a^{*} /\left\{a^{*}+2 s^{2^{*}} /(t-1)\right\}$.
Consequently one obtains the following linear estimator for the variance part of the loading, i.e. the conditional expectation of $\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)$ :

$$
E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right) \mid \underline{X}_{j}\right] \cong\left(1-c_{1}\right) E\left[\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right]+c_{1} S_{j}^{2}
$$

(see (2.16) and (2.20)).

## 3 Conclusions

In this paper we have obtained linear approximations which are unbiased estimates for the expected value part (i.e. for the conditional expectation of $\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)$ ), respectively for the variance part (i.e. for the conditional expectation of $\left.\sigma^{2}\left(\theta_{j}\right)\right)$ and finally for the fluctuation part (the conditional variance of $\mu\left(\theta_{j}\right)$ ) of the loading from the variance premium, using the greatest accuracy theory.

The present article contains a method to estimate risk premiums loaded by a fraction of the variance of the risk, as opposed to the net premiums studied thus far in the credibility theory.

The first section shows that the Esscher premium approaches the variance principle and that this premium is derived as an optimal estimator minimizing a suitable loss function. So, in the first section it is shown that it can be used as an approximation to the variance loaded premium, by truncating a series expansion. Also, the approach of the problem of Esscher premium, followed in the first section is to consider the best linear credibility estimator which minimizes the exponentially weighted squared error loss function.

The second section analyses and presents the linear non-homogeneous credibility estimators for the separate parts of the variance premium. It happens that the linear credibility approximations for each of the parts in the variance premium to coincide with the unbiased estimates for the expected value part, the variance part and the fluctuation part from the variance premium. The approach of the problem of loaded premiums, followed in the second section is to simply add "credibility" like estimators for the separate parts of the variance premium.

So, the problem under discussion is to get linear approximations, which are unbiased estimates for the expected value part, variance part, fluctuation part, i.e. for the separate parts of the variance premium, using the classical model of Bühlmann and the credibility for the Esscher premiums.

## References

[1] Atanasiu V. Contributions of the credibility theory. Printech Publishing, 2009, pp. 7-20, 21-36, 37-44, 63-94, 95-104, 105-130.
[2] Atanasiu V. Techniques for estimating the premiums for the risks of the insurance companies in Romania. Metalurgia International, 2009, 7, vol. XIV, 61-66.
[3] Atanasiu V. The calculations of credibility in the hierarchical model with two-levels. Metalurgia International, 2009, 4, special issue, vol. XIV, 118-123.
[4] Atanasiu V. Semi-linear credibility. Economic Computation and Economic Cybernetics Studies and Research, 2007, 3-4, vol. 41, 213-224.
[5] Bühlmann H., Gisler A. A Course in Credibility Theory and its Applications. Springer Verlag, Berlin-Heidelberg, 2005, pp. 55-74, 77-117, 199-217.
[6] Cossette H., Marceau É., Toureille F. Risk models based on time series for count random variables. Insurance: Mathematics and Economics, 2011, 48, issue 1, 19-28.
[7] De Vylder F., Goovaerts M. J. Semilinear credibility with several approximating functions, Insurance: Mathematics and Economics, 1985, 4, 155-162.
[8] Gerber H. U., Jones D. A. Credibility formulas of the updating type, in "Credibility theory and application". Proceedings of the Berkeley Actuarial Research Conference on credibility, Academic Press, New York, 1980, 89-109.
[9] Gerber H. U. Credibility for Esscher premiums, Mitteilungen der VSVM, 1980, 80, 307-312.
[10] Goovaerts M. J., Kaas R., Van Heerwaarden A. E., Bauwelincks T. Insurance Series. Vol. 3, Effective Actuarial Methods, Elsevier Science Publishers B. V., 1990, 187-211.
[11] Ohlsson E. Combining generalized linear models and credibility models in practice. Scandinavian Actuarial Journal, 2008, 4, 301-314, Applied Section, Taylor \& Francis Group.
[12] Ohlsson E. Simplified estimation of structure parameters in hierarchical credibility. The 36th ASTIN Colloquium, Zurich, 2005, Available online at: http://www.astin200f.ch/.
[13] Ohlsson E. Credibility estimators in multiplicative models. Mathematical Statistics, Stockholm University, Research Report 2006, 3. Available online at: http://www.math.su.se/matstat/reports/seriea/.
[14] Pentikäinen T., Daykin C.D., Pesonen M. Practical Risk Theory for Actuaries. Chapman \& Hall, 1993.
[15] Sundt B. An Introduction to Non-Life Insurance Mathematics. Publications of the Institute of Insurance Science, University of Mannheim, Vol. 28, Karlsruhe, 1984, 22-54.

Virginia Atanasiu
Received Aprile 10, 2011
Department of Mathematics
Academy of Economic Studies
Bucharest, Romania
E-mail: virginia_atanasiu@yahoo.com

# Properties of covers in the lattice of group topologies for nilpotent groups 

V. I. Arnautov


#### Abstract

A nilpotent group $\widehat{G}$ and two group topologies $\widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}$ and $\widehat{\tau} *$ on $\widehat{G}$ are constructed such that $\widehat{\tau} *$ is a coatom in the lattice of all group topologies of the group $\widehat{G}$ and such that between $\inf \left\{\widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}, \widehat{\tau}_{d}\right\}$ and $\inf \left\{\widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}, \widehat{\tau} *\right\}$ there exists an infinite chain of group topologies.


Mathematics subject classification: 22A05.
Keywords and phrases: Nilpotent group, group topology, lattice of group topologies, unrefinable chains, coatom, infimum of group topologies.

## 1 Introduction

As is known, in any modular lattice, the lengths of any finite unrefinable chains with the same ends are equal. Moreover, the lengths of finite unrefinable chains do not become greater if we take the infimum or the supremum in these lattices.

The lattice of all group topologies for a nilpotent group need not be modular [1]. However, as is shown in [2], in the lattice of all group topologies on a nilpotent group, the lengths of any finite unrefinable chains which have the same ends are equal. Moreover, in the same article it is shown that the lengths of any finite unrefinable chains do not become greater if we take the supremum.

Given the above, it was natural to expect that the lengths of any finite unrefinable chains do not become greater if in the lattice of all group topologies for a nilpotent group we take the infimum. However, as shown in this article, it is not the case.

To present the further results we need the following known result (see [3], page 203):

Theorem 1. Let $\mathcal{B}$ be a collection of subsets of a group $G(\cdot)$ such that the following conditions are satisfied:

1) $e \in V$ for any $V \in \mathcal{B}$, where $e$ is the unity element in the group $G(\cdot)$;
2) for any $V_{1}, V_{2} \in \mathcal{B}$ there exists $V_{3} \in \mathcal{B}$ such that $V_{3} \subseteq V_{1} \cap V_{2}$;
3) for any $V_{1} \in \mathcal{B}$ there exists $V_{2} \in \mathcal{B}$ such that $V_{2} \cdot V_{2} \subseteq V_{1}$;
4) for any $V_{1} \in \mathcal{B}$ there exists $V_{2} \in \mathcal{B}$ such that $V_{2}^{-1} \subseteq V_{1}$;
5) for any $V_{1} \in \mathcal{B}$ and any element $g \in G$ there exists $V_{2} \in \mathcal{B}$ such that $g \cdot V_{2} \cdot g^{-1} \subseteq V_{1}$.
[^4]Then there exists a unique group topology $\tau$ on the group $G(\cdot)$ for which the collection $\mathcal{B}$ is a basis of neighborhoods of the unity element $e^{1}$ (see [3], page 26).

From Theorem 1 follows easily:
Corollary 2. Let group topologies $\tau_{1}$ and $\tau_{2}$ be defined on a group $G(\cdot)$. If $\mathcal{B}_{1}$ and $\mathcal{B}_{2}$ are bases of neighborhoods of the unity element in topological groups $\left(G, \tau_{1}\right)$ and $\left(G, \tau_{2}\right)$, respectively, then the collection $\mathcal{B}=\left\{U \bigcap V \mid U \in \mathcal{B}_{1}, V \in \mathcal{B}_{2}\right\}$ is a basis of neighborhoods of the unity element in the topological group $(G, \tau)$, where $\tau=\sup \left\{\tau_{1}, \tau_{2}\right\}$.

## 2 Basic results

To state basic results we need the following notations:

## Notations 3.

3.1. $\mathbb{N}$ is the set of all natural numbers, $\mathbb{Z}$ is the set of all integers and $\mathbb{R}(+, \cdot)$ is the field of real numbers;
3.2. $G$ is the set of all matrices $\left(\begin{array}{ccc}1 & a_{1,2} & a_{1,3} \\ 0 & 1 & a_{2,3} \\ 0 & 0 & 1\end{array}\right)$ of the dimension $3 \times 3$ over the field $\mathbb{R}$ of real numbers such that $a_{i, i}=1$ for $1 \leq i \leq 3$ and $a_{i, j}=0$ for $1 \leq j<i \leq 3$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& G^{\prime}=\left\{\left.\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & a_{1,2} & a_{1,3} \\
0 & 1 & a_{2,3} \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right) \in G \right\rvert\, a_{1,3}=a_{2,3}=0\right\} \\
& G^{\prime \prime}=\left\{\left.\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & a_{1,2} & a_{1,3} \\
0 & 1 & a_{2,3} \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right) \in G \right\rvert\, a_{1,2}=a_{1,3}=0\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

$G(A)=\left\{\left.\left(\begin{array}{ccc}1 & a_{1,2} & a_{1,3} \\ 0 & 1 & a_{2,3} \\ 0 & 0 & 1\end{array}\right) \in G \right\rvert\, a_{1,2}=0\right.$ and $\left.a_{1,3} \in A\right\}$ for any subgroup $A(+)$ of the group $\mathbb{R}(+)$;
3.3. $G_{i}(\cdot)=G(\cdot), G_{i}^{\prime}(\cdot)=G^{\prime}(\cdot)$ and $G_{i}^{\prime \prime}(\cdot)=G^{\prime \prime}(\cdot)$ for every natural number $i$;
3.4. $G_{i}(A)=G(A)$ for every natural number $i$ and any subgroup $A(+)$ of the group $\mathbb{R}(+)$;
3.5. $\widehat{G}=\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} G_{i}, \widehat{G}^{\prime}=\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} G_{i}^{\prime}$ and $\widehat{G}^{\prime \prime}=\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} G_{i}^{\prime \prime}$;
3.6. $\widetilde{V_{n}}=\left\{\widetilde{g} \in \widetilde{G} \mid p r_{i}(\widetilde{g})=e_{i}\right.$ if $\left.i \leq n\right\}$ for any $n \in \mathbb{N}$;
3.7. $\widehat{G}_{k}(A)=\left\{\widehat{g} \in \widehat{G} \mid p r_{k}(\widehat{g}) \in G_{k}^{\prime \prime}(A)\right.$ and $p r_{j}(\widehat{g})=\{e\}$ if $\left.j \neq k\right\}$, where $k \in \mathbb{N}$ and $A(+)$ is a subgroup of the group $\mathbb{R}(+)$;
3.8. $\widehat{G}(A, S)=\left\{\widehat{g} \in \widehat{G} \mid p r_{i}(\widehat{g}) \in G_{i}(A)\right.$ if $i \in S$ and $p r_{j}(\widehat{g}) \in G_{j}^{\prime \prime}$ if $\left.j \notin S\right\}$, where $A(+)$ is a subgroup of the group $\mathbb{R}(+)$ and $S \subseteq \mathbb{N}$;

[^5]3.9. $\tau_{i}$ is discrete in the group $G_{i}$ and $\widetilde{\tau}$ is Tikhonov topology of the direct product $\widetilde{G}=\prod_{i=1}^{\infty}\left(G_{i}, \tau_{i}\right)$.

Remark 4. It is easy to see that $G$ with the usual operation of matrix multiplication is a group.

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \text { Since }\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & a & b \\
0 & 1 & c \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right)^{-1}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & -a & a \cdot c-b \\
0 & 1 & -c \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right) \text {, then } \\
& \left(\begin{array}{lll}
1 & a & b \\
0 & 1 & c \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right) \cdot\left(\begin{array}{lll}
1 & x & y \\
0 & 1 & z \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right) \cdot\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & a & b \\
0 & 1 & c \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right)^{-1} \cdot\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & x & y \\
0 & 1 & z \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right)^{-1}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & 0 & -y \cdot c+a \cdot z \\
0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

and as the center of the group $G$ contains any matrix of the form $\left(\begin{array}{lll}1 & 0 & d \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1\end{array}\right)$ for $d \in \mathbb{R}$, then $G(\cdot)$ is a nilpotent group and its nilpotency index is 2 .

In addition, since $\left(\begin{array}{ccc}1 & a & a_{1,3} \\ 0 & 1 & a_{2,3} \\ 0 & 0 & 1\end{array}\right) \cdot\left(\begin{array}{ccc}1 & 0 & b_{1,3} \\ 0 & 1 & b_{2,3} \\ 0 & 0 & 1\end{array}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}1 & a & a_{1,3}+b_{1,3} \\ 0 & 1 & a_{2,3}+b_{2,3} \\ 0 & 0 & 1\end{array}\right)$, then $G^{\prime}(\cdot), G^{\prime \prime}(\cdot)$ and $G(A)(\cdot)$ are subgroups of the group $G(\cdot)$ for any subgroup $A(+)$ of the additive group of the field $\mathbb{R}(+, \cdot)$.

Proposition 5. For the group $\widehat{G}$ the following statements are true:
Statement 5.1. The collection $\mathcal{B}^{\prime}=\left\{\widetilde{V}_{i} \bigcap \widehat{G}^{\prime} \mid i \in \mathbb{N}\right\}$ satisfies the conditions of Theorem 1, and hence, it is a basis of neighborhoods of the unity element for a group topology $\widehat{\tau}^{\prime}$ on the group $\widehat{G}$;

Statement 5.2. The collection $\mathcal{B}^{\prime \prime}=\left\{\widetilde{V}_{i} \bigcap \widehat{G}^{\prime \prime} \mid i \in \mathbb{N}\right\}$ satisfies the conditions of Theorem 1, and hence, is a basis of neighborhoods of the unity element for a group topology $\widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}$ on the group $\widehat{G}$;

Statement 5.3. If $A$ is a subgroup of the group $\mathbb{R}(+)$ of the field $\mathbb{R}(+, \cdot)$, and $\mathcal{F}$ is the Frechet filter ${ }^{2}$ on the set $\mathbb{N}$, then the collection $\mathcal{B}(A, \mathcal{F})=\left\{\widehat{G}(A, F) \bigcap \widetilde{V_{n}} \mid F \in\right.$ $\mathcal{F}, n \in \mathbb{N}\}$ satisfies all the conditions of Theorem 1, and hence, it is a basis of neighborhoods of the unity element for a group topology $\widehat{\tau}(A, \mathcal{F})$ on the group $\widehat{G}$.

Proof. Since $\widehat{G}(A, F \bigcap S) \subseteq \widehat{G}(A, F) \bigcap \widehat{G}(A, S)$ for any subgroup $A(+)$ of the group $\mathbb{R}(+)$ and any subsets $S \subseteq \mathbb{N}$ and $F \subseteq \mathbb{N}$ for which $\widetilde{V}_{i} \subseteq \widetilde{V}_{k}$ if $k \leq i$, then any of the mentioned collections satisfies condition 2 of Theorem 1.

In addition, taking into consideration the definitions of sets $\widetilde{V}_{n}, \widehat{G}^{\prime}, \widehat{G}^{\prime \prime}$, and $\widehat{G}(A, F)$ we obtain that any set from the collection $\mathcal{B}^{\prime} \cup \mathcal{B}^{\prime \prime} \bigcup \mathcal{B}(A, \mathcal{F})$ is a subgroup of the group $\widehat{G}(\cdot)$, and hence, any collection $\mathcal{B}^{\prime}, \mathcal{B}^{\prime \prime}$, and $\mathcal{B}(A, \mathcal{F})$ satisfies conditions 1,3 and 4 of Theorem 1.

[^6]To complete the proof of the theorem it remains to verify that for any of the mentioned collections condition 5 of Theorem 1 is also satisfied.

Let $\widehat{g} \in \widehat{G}$, then there exists a natural number $n$ such that $p r_{i}(\widehat{g})=e_{i}$ for $i>m$.
If $\widetilde{V_{k}} \bigcap \widehat{G}^{\prime} \in \mathcal{B}^{\prime}$ and $m=\max \{k, n\}$, then $\widehat{g} \cdot \widehat{a} \cdot \widehat{g}^{-1}=\widehat{a}$ for any $\widehat{a} \in \widetilde{V}_{m} \bigcap \widehat{G}^{\prime}$, and hence,

$$
\widehat{g} \cdot\left(\widetilde{V}_{m} \bigcap \widehat{G}^{\prime}\right) \cdot \widehat{g}^{-1}=\widetilde{V}_{m} \bigcap \widehat{G}^{\prime} \subseteq \widetilde{V_{k}} \bigcap \widehat{G}^{\prime}
$$

i.e. condition 5 of Theorem 1 holds for the collection $\mathcal{B}^{\prime}$.

Analogously, if $\widetilde{V_{k}} \bigcap \widehat{G}^{\prime \prime} \in \mathcal{B}^{\prime \prime}$ and $M=\max \{k, n\}$, then $\widehat{g} \cdot \widehat{a} \cdot \widehat{g}^{-1}=\widehat{a}$ for any $\widehat{a} \in \widetilde{V}_{m} \bigcap \widehat{G}^{\prime \prime}$, and hence,

$$
\widehat{g} \cdot\left(\widetilde{V}_{m} \bigcap \widehat{G}^{\prime \prime}\right) \cdot \widehat{g}^{-1}=\widetilde{V}_{m} \bigcap \widehat{G}^{\prime \prime} \subseteq \widetilde{V}_{k} \bigcap \widehat{G}^{\prime \prime}
$$

i.e. condition 5 of Theorem 1 holds for the collection $\mathcal{B}^{\prime \prime}$.

If $\widehat{V}(A, F) \bigcap \widetilde{V}_{k} \in \mathcal{B}(A \mathcal{F})$ and $m=\max \{n, k\}$, then $\widehat{V}(A, F) \bigcap \widetilde{V}_{m} \subseteq \widehat{V}(A, F) \bigcap \widetilde{V}_{k}$ and $\widehat{g} \cdot \widehat{a} \cdot \widehat{g}^{-1}=\widehat{a}$ for any $\widehat{a} \in \widehat{V}(A, F) \bigcap \widetilde{V}_{m}$, and hence,

$$
\widehat{g} \cdot\left(\widehat{V}(A, F) \bigcap \widetilde{V_{m}}\right) \cdot \widehat{g}^{-1}=\widehat{V}(A, F) \bigcap \widetilde{V_{m}} \subseteq \widehat{V}(A, F) \bigcap \widetilde{V_{k}}
$$

i.e. condition 5 of Theorem 1 holds for the collection $\mathcal{B}(A, \mathcal{F})$.

By this, the proposition is completely proved.

Proposition 6. Let $\widehat{\tau}^{\prime}$ and $\widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}$ be group topologies on the group $\widehat{G}$, defined in Proposition 5 , and $n \in \mathbb{N}$. If $\tau$ is a non-discrete group topology on the group $\widehat{G}$ such that $\tau \geq \widehat{\tau}^{\prime}$, then for any neighborhood $W$ of the unity element $\widehat{e}$ in the topological group $\left(\widehat{G}, \inf \left\{\tau, \widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}\right\}\right)$ there exists a natural number $k \geq n$ such that (see 3.7) $\widehat{G}_{k}(\mathbb{R}) \subseteq W$.

Proof. Let $W$ be a neighborhood of the unity element in the topological group $\left(\widehat{G}, \inf \left\{\tau, \widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}\right\}\right)$, and let $W_{1}$ be a neighborhood of the unity element in the topological group $\left(\widehat{G}, \inf \left\{\tau, \widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}\right\}\right)$ such that $W_{1} \cdot\left(W_{1} \cdot W_{1} \cdot\left(W_{1}\right)^{-1} \cdot\left(W_{1}\right)^{-1}\right) \subseteq W$.

Then $W_{1}$ is a neighborhood of the unity element in each of the topological groups $(\widehat{G}, \tau)$ and $\left(\widehat{G}, \widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}\right)$, and hence, there exists a natural number $n_{0} \in \mathbb{N}$ such that $n_{0} \geq n$ and $\widetilde{V}_{n_{0}} \cap \widehat{G}^{\prime \prime} \subseteq W_{1}$.

Since $\tau \geq \widehat{\tau}^{\prime}$, then $\widehat{G}^{\prime} \cap \widetilde{V}_{n_{0}}$ is a neighborhood of the unity element in the topological group $(\widehat{G}, \tau)$. Then, $\widehat{G}^{\prime} \bigcap \widetilde{V}_{n_{0}} \bigcap W_{1}$ is a neighborhood of the unity element in the topological group $(\widehat{G}, \tau)$.

Since $\tau$ is a non-discrete topology, then $\widehat{G}^{\prime} \bigcap \widetilde{V}_{n_{0}} \cap W_{1} \neq\{0\}$. If $0 \neq \widehat{g}_{0} \in$ $\widehat{G}^{\prime} \bigcap \widetilde{V}_{n_{0}} \bigcap W_{1} \neq\{0\}$, then there exists a natural number $k \geq n_{0} \geq n$ such that $p_{k}\left(\widehat{g}_{0}\right) \neq 0$.

Since $\widehat{g}_{0} \in \widehat{G}^{\prime}$, then $p r_{k}\left(\widehat{g}_{0}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}1 & a & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1\end{array}\right)$, and $a \neq 0$.

For any numbers $r, x \in \mathbb{R}$ consider matrices $\left(\begin{array}{ccc}1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & \left(a^{-1}\right) \cdot x \\ 0 & 0 & 1\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{lll}1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & r \\ 0 & 0 & 1\end{array}\right)$, and $\left(\begin{array}{lll}1 & 0 & x \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1\end{array}\right)$. Then (see Remark 4)

$$
\begin{gathered}
\left(\begin{array}{lll}
1 & 0 & x \\
0 & 1 & r \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{lll}
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & r \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right) \cdot\left(\begin{array}{lll}
1 & 0 & x \\
0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right)= \\
\left(\begin{array}{lll}
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & r \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right) \cdot\left(\left(\begin{array}{lll}
1 & a & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right) \cdot\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & a^{-1} \cdot x \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right) \cdot\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & a & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right)^{-1} \cdot\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & a^{-1} \cdot x \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right)^{-1}\right)
\end{gathered}
$$

For any numbers $r, x \in \mathbb{R}$ we consider elements $\widehat{g}_{r}, \widehat{g}_{x} \in \widehat{G}$ such that

$$
\begin{gathered}
p r_{k}\left(\widehat{g}_{r}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{lll}
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & r \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right) \text { and } p r_{i}(\widehat{g})=e_{i} \text { for } i \neq k, \\
p r_{k}\left(\widehat{g}_{x}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & a^{-1} \cdot x \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right) \text { and } p r_{i}(\widehat{g})=e_{i} \text { for } i \neq k .
\end{gathered}
$$

Since $k \geq n_{0}$, then $\widehat{g}_{r} \in \widetilde{V}_{n_{0}} \bigcap \widehat{G}^{\prime \prime} \subseteq W_{1}$ and $\widehat{g}_{x} \in \widetilde{V}_{n_{0}} \bigcap \widehat{G}^{\prime \prime} \subseteq W_{1}$ for any numbers $r, x \in \mathbb{R}$. Then $\widehat{g}_{r} \cdot\left(\widehat{g}_{0} \cdot \widehat{g}_{x} \cdot \widehat{g}_{0}^{-1} \cdot \widehat{g}_{x}^{-1}\right) \in W_{1} \cdot W_{1} \cdot W_{1} \cdot\left(W_{1}\right)^{-1} \cdot\left(W_{1}\right)^{-1} \subseteq W$ for any numbers $r, x \in \mathbb{R}$, and hence, $\widehat{G}_{k}(\mathbb{R})=\left\{\widehat{g}_{r} \cdot \widehat{g}_{0} \cdot \widehat{g}_{x} \cdot \widehat{g}_{0}^{-1} \cdot \widehat{g}_{x}^{-1} \mid r, x \in \mathbb{R}\right\} \subseteq W$.

As $p r_{k}\left(\widehat{g}_{r} \cdot \widehat{g}_{0} \cdot \widehat{g}_{x} \cdot \widehat{g}_{0}^{-1} \cdot \widehat{g}_{x}^{-1}\right)=$
$\left(\begin{array}{lll}1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & r \\ 0 & 0 & 1\end{array}\right) \cdot\left(\left(\begin{array}{lll}1 & a & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1\end{array}\right) \cdot\left(\begin{array}{ccc}1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & a^{-1} \cdot x \\ 0 & 0 & 1\end{array}\right) \cdot\left(\begin{array}{lll}1 & a & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1\end{array}\right)^{-1} \cdot\left(\begin{array}{ccc}1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & a^{-1} \cdot x \\ 0 & 0 & 1\end{array}\right)^{-1}\right)=$
$\left(\begin{array}{lll}1 & 0 & x \\ 0 & 1 & r \\ 0 & 0 & 1\end{array}\right)$ for any $r, x \in \mathbb{R}$, and $p r_{i}\left(\widehat{g}_{i} \cdot \widehat{g}_{0} \cdot \widehat{g}_{x} \cdot \widehat{g}_{0}^{-1} \cdot \widehat{g}_{x}^{-1}\right)=e_{i}$ for any $R, x \in \mathbb{R}$ and for any $i \neq k$, then $\operatorname{pr}_{k}\left(\widehat{A}_{k}\right)=\left\{\left.\left(\begin{array}{ccc}1 & 0 & x \\ 0 & 1 & r \\ 0 & 0 & 1\end{array}\right) \right\rvert\, r\right.$ and $\left.x \in \mathbb{R}\right\}=G_{k}(\mathbb{R})$ and $\operatorname{pr}_{i}\left(\widehat{A}_{k}\right)=\left\{e_{i}\right\}$ for $i \neq k$.

By this, the proposition is completely proved.

Theorem 7. Let $\widehat{\tau}^{\prime}$ and $\widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}$ be group topologies on the group $\widehat{G}$, defined in Proposition 5, and $\mathcal{F}$ be the Frechet filter. Then the following statements are true:

Statement 7.1. If $\tau$ is a group topology on the group $\widehat{G}$ such that $\tau \geq \widehat{\tau}^{\prime}$, then

$$
\sup \left\{\widehat{\tau}(A, \mathcal{F}), \inf \left\{\widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}, \tau\right\}\right\}>\sup \left\{\widehat{\tau}(B, \mathcal{F}), \inf \left\{\widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}, \tau\right\}\right\}
$$

for any subgroups $A \subset B$ of the group $\mathbb{R}(+)$.
Statement 7.2. If $\widehat{\tau}_{d}$ is the discrete topology on the group $\widehat{G}$, and $\widehat{\tau} *$ is a coatom in the lattice of all group topologies on the group $\widehat{G}$ such that $\widehat{\tau} * \geq \widehat{\tau}^{\prime}$, then between the topologies $\inf \left\{\widehat{\tau}_{d}, \widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}\right\}$ and $\inf \left\{\widehat{\tau} *, \widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}\right\}$, there exists a chain of group topologies on the group $\widehat{G}$ which is infinitely decreasing and infinitely increasing.

Proof. Proof of Statement 7.1. Since $A \subset B$, then (see the notation at the beginning of this article) $\widehat{V}(A, S) \subseteq \widehat{V}(B, S)$ for any $S \in \mathcal{F}$. Then (see Proposition 5) $\widehat{\tau}(A, \mathcal{F}) \geq \widehat{\tau}(B, \mathcal{F})$, and hence, $\sup \left\{\widehat{\tau}(A, \mathcal{F}), \inf \left\{\widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}, \tau\right\}\right\} \geq \sup \left\{\widehat{\tau}(B, \mathcal{F}), \inf \left\{\widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}, \tau\right\}\right\}$.

We will show that $\sup \left\{\widehat{\tau}(A, \mathcal{F}), \inf \left\{\widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}, \tau\right\}\right\}>\sup \left\{\widehat{\tau}(B, \mathcal{F}), \inf \left\{\widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}, \tau\right\}\right\}$.
Assume the contrary, i.e. that

$$
\sup \left\{\widehat{\tau}(A, \mathcal{F}), \inf \left\{\widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}, \tau\right\}\right\}=\sup \left\{\widehat{\tau}(B, \mathcal{F}), \inf \left\{\widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}, \tau\right\}\right\}
$$

and let $S_{0} \in \mathcal{F}$. Then $\widehat{V}\left(A, S_{0}\right)$ is a neighborhood of the unity element in the topological group $(\widehat{G}, \widehat{\tau}(A, \mathcal{F}))$, and hence, $\widehat{V}\left(A, S_{0}\right)$ is a neighborhood of the unity element in the topological group $\left(\widehat{G}, \sup \left\{\widehat{\tau}(A, \mathcal{F}), \inf \left\{\widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}, \tau\right\}\right\}\right)=\left(\widehat{G}, \sup \left\{\widehat{\tau}(B, \mathcal{F}), \inf \left\{\widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}, \tau\right\}\right\}\right)$. Then there exists a neighborhood $W$ of the unity element in the topological group $\left(\widehat{G}, \inf \left\{\widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}, \tau\right\}\right)$ such that $W \bigcap\left(\widehat{V}\left(B, S_{1}\right) \bigcap \widetilde{V}_{n}\right) \subseteq \widehat{V}\left(A, S_{0}\right)$ for some $S_{1} \in \mathcal{F}$ and a natural number $n \in \mathbb{N}$.

Since $\mathcal{F}$ is the Frechet filter, then there exists a natural number $m \in \mathbb{N}$ such that $\{i \in \mathbb{N} \mid i>m\} \subseteq S_{0} \bigcap S_{1}$.

By Proposition 6, there exists a natural number $k \geq \max \{n, m\}$ such that $\widehat{G}_{k}(\mathbb{R}) \subseteq W$, and hence, $\widehat{G}_{k}(B) \subseteq \widehat{G}_{k}(\mathbb{R}) \subseteq W$.

As $\bar{k} \in\{i \in \mathbb{N} \mid i>m\} \subseteq S_{1}$ then $\widehat{G}_{k}(B) \subseteq \widehat{V}\left(B, S_{1}\right)$, and as $k \geq n$ then $\widehat{G}_{k}(B) \subseteq \widetilde{V}_{n}$. Then $\widehat{G}_{k}(B) \subseteq W \bigcap \widehat{V}\left(B, S_{1}\right) \cap \widetilde{V}_{n} \subseteq \widehat{V}\left(A, S_{0}\right)$.

Since $k \in\{i \in \mathbb{N} \mid i>m\} \subseteq S_{0}$, then $($ see 3.7$) G_{k}(B)=p_{k}\left(\widehat{G}_{k}(B)\right) \subseteq$ $\operatorname{pr}_{k}\left(\widehat{V}\left(A, S_{0}\right)\right)=G_{k}(A)$, but this contradicts that $B \nsubseteq A$.

By this, Statement 7.1 is proved.
Proof of Statement 7.2. There exists a chain $\left\{A_{i} \mid i \in \mathbb{Z}\right\}$ of subgroups $A_{i}$ of the group $\mathbb{R}(+)$ such that $A_{i} \subseteq A_{i+1}$ for any $i \in \mathbb{Z}$, i.e. this chain of subgroups is infinitely decreasing and infinitely increasing.

For any subgroup $A_{i}$ let consider the topology $\widehat{\tau}\left(A_{i}, \mathcal{F}\right)$. Since $\widehat{\tau} * \geq \widehat{\tau}^{\prime}$, then by Statement 7.1,

$$
\sup \left\{\widehat{\tau}\left(A_{i}, \mathcal{F}\right), \inf \left\{\widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}, \widehat{\tau} *\right\}\right\}>\sup \left\{\widehat{\tau}\left(A_{i+1}, \mathcal{F}\right), \inf \left\{\widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}, \widehat{\tau} *\right\}\right\}
$$

and hence, the chain of group topologies $\left\{\sup \left\{\widehat{\tau}\left(A_{i}, \mathcal{F}\right), \inf \left\{\widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}, \widehat{\tau} *\right\}\right\} \mid i \in \mathbb{Z}\right\}$ is infinitely decreasing and infinitely increasing.

To complete the proof of the theorem it remains to verify that

$$
\inf \left\{\widehat{\tau *}, \widehat{\tau^{\prime \prime}}\right\} \leq \sup \left\{\widehat{\tau}\left(A_{i}, \mathcal{F}\right), \inf \left\{\widehat{\tau} *, \widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}\right\}\right\} \leq \inf \left\{\widehat{\tau_{d}}, \widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}\right\}
$$

for any subgroup $A_{i}(+)$ of the group $\mathbb{R}(+)$, where $i \in \mathbb{Z}$.
In fact, from the definition of the sets $G(A)$ and $G^{\prime \prime}$ (see 3.2) it follows that $G(0)=G^{\prime \prime}$, and hence, $G_{k}(0)=G_{k}^{\prime \prime}$ for any $k \in \mathbb{N}$. Then $\widehat{G}(\{0\}, S) \bigcap \widetilde{V}_{n}=\widehat{G}^{\prime \prime} \bigcap \widetilde{V}_{n}$ for any subset $S \subseteq \mathbb{N}$ and any $n \in \mathbb{N}$, and hence, the collection $\left\{\widehat{G}(\{0\}, S) \cap \widetilde{V}_{n} \mid\right.$ $n \in \mathbb{N}\}$ is a basis of neighborhoods of the unity element in the topological group ( $\widehat{G}, \widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}$ ).

Since $\widehat{\tau}_{d}$ is the discrete topology on the group $\widehat{G}$, then $\inf \left\{\widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}, \widehat{\tau}_{d}\right\}=\widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}$, and hence, the set $\left\{\widehat{G}(\{0\}, S) \cap \widetilde{V}_{n} \mid n \in \mathbb{N}\right\}$ is a basis of neighborhoods of the unity element in the topological group $\left(\widehat{G}, \inf \left\{\widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}, \widehat{\tau}_{d}\right\}\right)$. Then $\widehat{\tau}(\{0\}, \mathcal{F}) \leq \inf \left\{\widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}, \widehat{\tau}_{d}\right\}$.

So, we have proved that $\sup \left\{\widehat{\tau}\left(A_{i}, \mathcal{F}\right), \inf \left\{\tau *, \widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}\right\}\right\} \leq \inf \left\{\tau_{d}, \widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}\right\}$. Since $\{0\} \subseteq A_{i}$ for any $i \in \mathbb{Z}$, then

$$
\inf \left\{\widehat{\tau}_{*}, \widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}\right\} \leq \sup \left\{\widehat{\tau}\left(A_{i}, \mathcal{F}\right), \inf \left\{\widehat{\tau}_{*}, \widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}\right\}\right\} \leq \inf \left\{\widehat{\tau}_{d}, \widehat{\tau}^{\prime \prime}\right\}
$$

for any subgroup $A_{i}(+)$ of the group $\mathbb{R}(+)$.
By this, the theorem is proved.

## References

[1] Arnautov V.I., Topala A. Gh. An example of ring with non-modular lattice of ring topologies, Bul. Acad. Ştiinţe Repub. Moldova, Mat., 1998, No. 2(27), 130-131.
[2] Arnautov V. I. Properties of finite unrefinable chais of groups topologies, Bul. Acad. Ştiinţe Repub. Moldova, Mat., 2009, No. 2(60), 1-17.
[3] Bourbaki N. Obshchaya topologiya. Osnovnye structury (General Topology, Fundamental Structures), Moscow, 1958, 324 pages (in Russian).
V.I. Arnautov

Institute of Mathematics and Computer Science
Academy of Sciences of Moldova
5, Academiei str., Chişinău MD-2028
Moldova
Email: arnautov@math.md

Received February 02, 2012
Revised September 21, 2012

# A Note on the Affine Subspaces of Three-Dimensional Lie Algebras 

Rory Biggs, Claudiu C. Remsing


#### Abstract

A classification of full-rank affine subspaces of (real) three-dimensional Lie algebras is presented. In the context of invariant control affine systems, this is exactly a classification of all full-rank systems evolving on three-dimensional Lie groups. Mathematics subject classification: 17B20, 17B30, 93A10, 93B27. Keywords and phrases: Affine subspace, Lie algebra, the Bianchi-Behr classification, left-invariant control system, detached feedback equivalence.


## 1 Introduction

In this note we exhibit a classification, under $\mathfrak{L}$-equivalence, of full-rank affine subspaces of (real) three-dimensional Lie algebras. Two affine subspaces are $\mathfrak{L}$-equivalent, provided there exists a Lie algebra automorphism mapping one to the other. This classification is presented in three parts (see Theorems 1, 2, and 3). Proofs are omitted. However, a full treatment of each part will appear elsewhere [4-6]. Tables detailing these results are included as an appendix.

It turns out that two left-invariant control affine systems are detached feedback equivalent if (and only if) their traces are $\mathfrak{L}$-equivalent. Therefore, a classification under $\mathfrak{L}$-equivalence induces one under detached feedback equivalence.

## 2 Three-dimensional Lie algebras

The classification of three-dimensional Lie algebras is well known. The classification over $\mathbb{C}$ was done by S.Lie (1893), whereas the standard enumeration of the real cases is that of L. Bianchi (1918). In more recent times, a different (method of) classification was introduced by C. Behr (1968) and others (see [12-14] and the references therein). This is customarily referred to as the Bianchi-Behr classification, or even the "Bianchi-Schücking-Behr classification". Accordingly, any real three-dimensional Lie algebra is isomorphic to one of eleven types (in fact, there are nine algebras and two parametrised infinite families of algebras). In terms of an (appropriate) ordered basis $\left(E_{1}, E_{2}, E_{3}\right)$, the commutation operation is given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
& {\left[E_{2}, E_{3}\right]=n_{1} E_{1}-a E_{2}} \\
& {\left[E_{3}, E_{1}\right]=a E_{1}+n_{2} E_{2}}
\end{aligned}
$$

[^7]$$
\left[E_{1}, E_{2}\right]=n_{3} E_{3}
$$

The (Bianchi-Behr) structure parameters $a, n_{1}, n_{2}, n_{3}$ for each type are given in Table 1.

| Type | Notation | $a$ | $n_{1}$ | $n_{2}$ | $n_{3}$ | Representatives |
| :--- | :---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | :---: |
| $I$ | $3 \mathfrak{g}_{1}$ | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | $\mathbb{R}^{3}$ |
| $I I$ | $\mathfrak{g}_{3.1}$ | 0 | 1 | 0 | 0 | $\mathfrak{h}_{3}$ |
| $I I I=V I_{-1}$ | $\mathfrak{g}_{2.1} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{1}$ | 1 | 1 | -1 | 0 | $\mathfrak{a f f}(\mathbb{R}) \oplus \mathbb{R}$ |
| $I V$ | $\mathfrak{g}_{3.2}$ | 1 | 1 | 0 | 0 |  |
| $V$ | $\mathfrak{g}_{3.3}$ | 1 | 0 | 0 | 0 |  |
| $V I_{0}$ | $\mathfrak{g}_{3.4}^{0}$ | 0 | 1 | -1 | 0 | $\mathfrak{s e}(1,1)$ |
| $V I_{h},{ }_{h<0}^{h \neq-1}$ | $\mathfrak{g}_{3.4}^{h}$ | $\sqrt{-h}$ | 1 | -1 | 0 |  |
| $V I I_{0}$ | $\mathfrak{g}_{3.5}^{0}$ | 0 | 1 | 1 | 0 | $\mathfrak{s e}(2)$ |
| $V I I_{h}, h>0$ | $\mathfrak{g}_{3.5}^{h}$ | $\sqrt{h}$ | 1 | 1 | 0 |  |
| $V I I I$ | $\mathfrak{g}_{3.6}$ | 0 | 1 | 1 | -1 | $\mathfrak{s l}(2, \mathbb{R}), \mathfrak{s o}(2,1)$ |
| $I X$ | $\mathfrak{g}_{3.7}$ | 0 | 1 | 1 | 1 | $\mathfrak{s u}(2), \mathfrak{s o}(3)$ |

Table 1. Bianchi-Behr classification
We note that for the two infinite families, $V I_{h}$ and $V I I_{h}$, each value of the parameter $h$ yields a distinct (i.e., non-isomorphic) Lie algebra. Furthermore, for the purposes of this paper, type $I I I=V I_{-1}$ will be considered as part of $V I_{h}$.

## 3 Affine subspaces and classification

An affine subspace $\Gamma$ of a Lie algebra $\mathfrak{g}$ is written as

$$
\Gamma=A+\Gamma^{0}=A+\left\langle B_{1}, B_{2}, \ldots, B_{\ell}\right\rangle
$$

where $A, B_{1}, \ldots, B_{\ell} \in \mathfrak{g}$. Let $\Gamma_{1}$ and $\Gamma_{2}$ be two affine subspaces of $\mathfrak{g}$. We say that $\Gamma_{1}$ and $\Gamma_{2}$ are $\mathfrak{L}$-equivalent if there exists a Lie algebra automorphism $\psi \in \operatorname{Aut}(\mathfrak{g})$ such that $\psi \cdot \Gamma_{1}=\Gamma_{2}$. $\mathfrak{L}$-equivalence is a genuine equivalence relation. An affine subspace $\Gamma$ is said to have full rank if it generates the whole Lie algebra (i.e., the smallest Lie algebra containing $\Gamma$ is $\mathfrak{g})$. Note that the full-rank property is invariant under $\mathfrak{L}$-equivalence.

Clearly, if $\Gamma_{1}$ and $\Gamma_{2}$ are $\mathfrak{L}$-equivalent, then they are necessarily of the same dimension. Furthermore, $0 \in \Gamma_{1}$ if and only if $0 \in \Gamma_{2}$. We shall find it convenient to refer to an $\ell$-dimensional affine subspace $\Gamma$ as an $(\ell, 0)$-affine subspace when $0 \in \Gamma$ (i.e., $\Gamma$ is a vector subspace) and as an $(\ell, 1)$-affine subspace, otherwise.

Remark 1. No (1, 0)-affine subspace has full rank. A (1, 1)-affine subspace has full rank if and only if $A, B_{1}$, and $\left[A, B_{1}\right]$ are linearly independent. A (2,0)-affine subspace has full rank if and only if $B_{1}, B_{2}$, and $\left[B_{1}, B_{2}\right]$ are linearly independent. Any $(2,1)$-affine subspace or $(3,0)$-affine subspace has full rank.

There is only one affine subspace whose dimension coincides with that of the Lie algebra $\mathfrak{g}$, namely the space itself. From the standpoint of classification, this case is trivial and hence will not be covered explicitly.

Let us fix a three-dimensional Lie algebra $\mathfrak{g}$ (together with an ordered basis). In order to classify the affine subspaces of $\mathfrak{g}$, one requires the (group of) automorphisms of $\mathfrak{g}$. These are well known (see, e. g., $[7,8,14]$ ); a summary is given in Table 2. For each type of Lie algebra, one constructs class representatives (by considering the action of automorphisms on a typical affine subspace). Finally, one verifies that none of these representatives are equivalent.

| Type | Commutators | Automorphisms |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| II | $\begin{aligned} & {\left[E_{2}, E_{3}\right]=E_{1}} \\ & {\left[E_{3}, E_{1}\right]=0} \\ & {\left[E_{1}, E_{2}\right]=0} \end{aligned}$ | $\left[\begin{array}{ccc}y w-v z & x & u \\ 0 & y & v \\ 0 & z & w\end{array}\right] ; y w \neq v z$ |
| IV | $\begin{aligned} & {\left[E_{2}, E_{3}\right]=E_{1}-E_{2}} \\ & {\left[E_{3}, E_{1}\right]=E_{1}} \\ & {\left[E_{1}, E_{2}\right]=0} \end{aligned}$ | $\left[\begin{array}{lll}u & x & y \\ 0 & u & z \\ 0 & 0 & 1\end{array}\right] ; u \neq 0$ |
| V | $\begin{aligned} & {\left[E_{2}, E_{3}\right]=-E_{2}} \\ & {\left[E_{3}, E_{1}\right]=E_{1}} \\ & {\left[E_{1}, E_{2}\right]=0} \end{aligned}$ | $\left[\begin{array}{ccc}x & y & z \\ u & v & w \\ 0 & 0 & 1\end{array}\right] ; x v \neq y u$ |
| $V I_{0}$ | $\begin{aligned} & {\left[E_{2}, E_{3}\right]=E_{1}} \\ & {\left[E_{3}, E_{1}\right]=-E_{2}} \\ & {\left[E_{1}, E_{2}\right]=0} \end{aligned}$ | $\left[\begin{array}{lll}x & y & u \\ y & x & v \\ 0 & 0 & 1\end{array}\right],\left[\begin{array}{ccc}x & y & u \\ -y & -x & v \\ 0 & 0 & -1\end{array}\right] ; x^{2} \neq y^{2}$ |
| $V I_{h}$ | $\begin{aligned} & {\left[E_{2}, E_{3}\right]=E_{1}-a E_{2}} \\ & {\left[E_{3}, E_{1}\right]=a E_{1}-E_{2}} \\ & {\left[E_{1}, E_{2}\right]=0} \end{aligned}$ | $\left[\begin{array}{lll}x & y & u \\ y & x & v \\ 0 & 0 & 1\end{array}\right] ; x^{2} \neq y^{2}$ |
| $V I I_{0}$ | $\begin{aligned} & {\left[E_{2}, E_{3}\right]=E_{1}} \\ & {\left[E_{3}, E_{1}\right]=E_{2}} \\ & {\left[E_{1}, E_{2}\right]=0} \end{aligned}$ | $\left[\begin{array}{ccc}x & y & u \\ -y & x & v \\ 0 & 0 & 1\end{array}\right],\left[\begin{array}{ccc}x & y & u \\ y & -x & v \\ 0 & 0 & -1\end{array}\right] ; x^{2} \neq-y^{2}$ |
| $V I I_{h}$ | $\begin{aligned} & {\left[E_{2}, E_{3}\right]=E_{1}-a E_{2}} \\ & {\left[E_{3}, E_{1}\right]=a E_{1}+E_{2}} \\ & {\left[E_{1}, E_{2}\right]=0} \end{aligned}$ | $\left[\begin{array}{ccc}x & y & u \\ -y & x & v \\ 0 & 0 & 1\end{array}\right] ; x^{2} \neq-y^{2}$ |
| VIII | $\begin{aligned} & {\left[E_{2}, E_{3}\right]=E_{1}} \\ & {\left[E_{3}, E_{1}\right]=E_{2}} \\ & {\left[E_{1}, E_{2}\right]=-E_{3}} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{gathered} M^{\top} J M=J \\ J=\operatorname{diag}(1,1,-1) \\ \operatorname{det} M=1 \end{gathered}$ |
| $I X$ | $\begin{aligned} & {\left[E_{2}, E_{3}\right]=E_{1}} \\ & {\left[E_{3}, E_{1}\right]=E_{2}} \\ & {\left[E_{1}, E_{2}\right]=E_{3}} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{gathered} M^{\top} M=I \\ I=\operatorname{diag}(1,1,1) \\ \operatorname{det} M=1 \end{gathered}$ |

Table 2. Automorphisms of three-dimensional Lie algebras

| Type | Notation | $(\ell, \varepsilon)$ | Equivalence representative | Parameter |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| II | $\mathfrak{g}_{3.1}$ | $(1,1)$ | $E_{2}+\left\langle E_{3}\right\rangle$ |  |
|  |  | $(2,0)$ | $\left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle$ |  |
|  |  | $(2,1)$ | $\begin{aligned} & E_{1}+\left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle \\ & E_{3}+\left\langle E_{1}, E_{2}\right\rangle \end{aligned}$ |  |
| $I V$ | $\mathfrak{g}_{3.2}$ | $(1,1)$ | $\begin{gathered} \hline E_{2}+\left\langle E_{3}\right\rangle \\ \alpha E_{3}+\left\langle E_{2}\right\rangle \end{gathered}$ | $\alpha \neq 0$ |
|  |  | $(2,0)$ | $\left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle$ |  |
|  |  | $(2,1)$ | $\begin{gathered} E_{1}+\left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle \\ E_{2}+\left\langle E_{3}, E_{1}\right\rangle \\ \alpha E_{3}+\left\langle E_{1}, E_{2}\right\rangle \end{gathered}$ |  |
| V | $\mathfrak{g}_{3.3}$ | $(1,1)$ | $\emptyset$ | $\alpha \neq 0$ |
|  |  | $(2,0)$ | $\emptyset$ |  |
|  |  | $(2,1)$ | $\begin{gathered} E_{1}+\left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle \\ \alpha E_{3}+\left\langle E_{1}, E_{2}\right\rangle \end{gathered}$ |  |
| $V I_{0}$ | $\mathfrak{g}_{3.4}^{0}$ | $(1,1)$ | $\begin{gathered} \hline \hline E_{2}+\left\langle E_{3}\right\rangle \\ \alpha E_{3}+\left\langle E_{2}\right\rangle \end{gathered}$ | $\alpha>0$ |
|  |  | $(2,0)$ | $\left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle$ |  |
|  |  | $(2,1)$ | $\begin{gathered} E_{1}+\left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle \\ E_{1}+\left\langle E_{1}+E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle \\ \alpha E_{3}+\left\langle E_{1}, E_{2}\right\rangle \end{gathered}$ |  |
| $V I_{h}$ | $\mathfrak{g}_{3.4}^{h}$ | $(1,1)$ | $\begin{gathered} E_{2}+\left\langle E_{3}\right\rangle \\ \alpha E_{3}+\left\langle E_{2}\right\rangle \end{gathered}$ | $\alpha \neq 0$ |
|  |  | $(2,0)$ | $\left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle$ |  |
|  |  | $(2,1)$ | $\begin{gathered} E_{1}+\left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle \\ E_{1}+\left\langle E_{1}+E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle \\ E_{1}+\left\langle E_{1}-E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle \\ \alpha E_{3}+\left\langle E_{1}, E_{2}\right\rangle \end{gathered}$ |  |
| $V I I_{0}$ | $\mathfrak{g}_{3.5}^{0}$ | $(1,1)$ | $\begin{gathered} \hline \hline E_{2}+\left\langle E_{3}\right\rangle \\ \alpha E_{3}+\left\langle E_{2}\right\rangle \end{gathered}$ | $\alpha>0$ |
|  |  | $(2,0)$ | $\left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle$ |  |
|  |  | $(2,1)$ | $\begin{gathered} E_{1}+\left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle \\ \alpha E_{3}+\left\langle E_{1}, E_{2}\right\rangle \end{gathered}$ |  |
| $V I I_{h}$ | $\mathfrak{g}_{3.5}^{h}$ | $(1,1)$ | $\begin{gathered} \hline E_{2}+\left\langle E_{3}\right\rangle \\ \alpha E_{3}+\left\langle E_{2}\right\rangle \end{gathered}$ | $\alpha \neq 0$ |
|  |  | $(2,0)$ | $\left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle$ |  |
|  |  | $(2,1)$ | $\begin{gathered} E_{1}+\left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle \\ \alpha E_{3}+\left\langle E_{1}, E_{2}\right\rangle \end{gathered}$ |  |

Table 3. Affine subspaces (types $I I$ to $V I I$, solvable)

We present our results for the solvable Lie algebras (types $I$ to VII) in the following two theorems; a summary is given in Table 3. The classification of type $I$ is trivial and is therefore omitted.

Theorem 1. Any full-rank affine subspace of $\mathfrak{g}_{3.1}$ (type II) is $\mathfrak{L}$-equivalent to exactly one of $E_{2}+\left\langle E_{3}\right\rangle,\left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle, E_{1}+\left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle$, and $E_{3}+\left\langle E_{1}, E_{2}\right\rangle$. Any fullrank affine subspace of $\mathfrak{g}_{3.2}$ (type IV) is $\mathfrak{L}$-equivalent to exactly one of $E_{2}+\left\langle E_{3}\right\rangle$, $\alpha E_{3}+\left\langle E_{2}\right\rangle,\left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle, E_{1}+\left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle, E_{2}+\left\langle E_{3}, E_{1}\right\rangle$, and $\alpha E_{3}+\left\langle E_{1}, E_{2}\right\rangle$. Any fullrank affine subspace of $\mathfrak{g}_{3.3}$ (type $V$ ) is $\mathfrak{L}$-equivalent to exactly one of $E_{1}+\left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle$, and $\alpha E_{3}+\left\langle E_{1}, E_{2}\right\rangle$. Here $\alpha \neq 0$ parametrises families of class representatives, each different value corresponding to a distinct non-equivalent representative.

The automorphisms of $\mathfrak{g}_{3.4}^{0}, \mathfrak{g}_{3.4}^{h}$ (including $h=-1$ ), $\mathfrak{g}_{3.5}^{0}$, and $\mathfrak{g}_{3.5}^{h}$ are very similar. Due to this similarity, we treat these types separately.

Theorem 2. Any full-rank affine subspace of $\mathfrak{g}_{3.5}^{0}$ or $\mathfrak{g}_{3.5}^{h}$ (type VII $I_{0}$ or VII , respectively) is $\mathfrak{L}$-equivalent (with respect to the different ordered bases) to exactly one of $E_{2}+\left\langle E_{3}\right\rangle, \alpha E_{3}+\left\langle E_{2}\right\rangle,\left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle, E_{1}+\left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle$, and $\alpha E_{3}+\left\langle E_{1}, E_{2}\right\rangle$, where $\alpha>0$ for $\mathfrak{g}_{3.5}^{0}$ and $\alpha \neq 0$ for $\mathfrak{g}_{3.5}^{h}$. Any full-rank affine subspace of $\mathfrak{g}_{3.4}^{0}$ (type $V I_{0}$ ) is $\mathfrak{L}$-equivalent to exactly one of the above formal list for $\mathfrak{g}_{3.5}^{0}$ or $E_{1}+\left\langle E_{1}+E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle$. Any full rank-affine subspace of $\mathfrak{g}_{3.4}^{h}$ (type $V I_{h}$ ) is $\mathfrak{L}$-equivalent to exactly one of the above formal list for $\mathfrak{g}_{3.5}^{h}$, or one of $E_{1}+\left\langle E_{1}+E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle$ and $E_{1}+\left\langle E_{1}-E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle$. Here a parametrises families of class representatives, each different value corresponding to a distinct non-equivalent representative.

Remark 2. The Lie algebras of types $I I, I I I, I V, V, V I_{0}$, and $V I_{h}$ are completely solvable, whereas those of types $V I I_{0}$ and $V I I_{h}$ are not.

| Type | Notation | $(\ell, \varepsilon)$ | Equivalence representative | Parameter |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| VIII | $\mathfrak{g}_{3.6}$ | $(1,1)$ | $\begin{gathered} \hline \hline E_{3}+\left\langle E_{2}+E_{3}\right\rangle \\ \alpha E_{2}+\left\langle E_{3}\right\rangle \\ \alpha E_{1}+\left\langle E_{2}\right\rangle \\ \alpha E_{3}+\left\langle E_{2}\right\rangle \\ \hline \end{gathered}$ | $\alpha>0$ |
|  |  | $(2,0)$ | $\begin{aligned} & \left\langle E_{1}, E_{2}\right\rangle \\ & \left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle \end{aligned}$ |  |
|  |  | $(2,1)$ | $\begin{gathered} E_{3}+\left\langle E_{1}, E_{2}+E_{3}\right\rangle \\ \alpha E_{1}+\left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle \\ \alpha E_{3}+\left\langle E_{1}, E_{2}\right\rangle \\ \hline \end{gathered}$ |  |
| $I X$ | $\mathfrak{g}_{3.7}$ | $(1,1)$ | $\alpha E_{1}+\left\langle E_{2}\right\rangle$ | $\alpha>0$ |
|  |  | $(2,0)$ | $\left\langle E_{1}, E_{2}\right\rangle$ |  |
|  |  | $(2,1)$ | $\alpha E_{1}+\left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle$ |  |

Table 4. Affine subspaces (types VIII and $I X$, semisimple)

Now, consider the case of the semisimple algebras (types VIII and $I X$ ). In each of the two cases, we employ a bilinear product $\omega$ (the Lorentz product and dot product, respectively) that is preserved by automorphisms. Most of the affine subspaces can then be characterised as being tangent to a level set (submanifold) $\{A \in \mathfrak{g}: \omega(A, A)=\alpha\}$. We present our classification in the following theorem; a summary is given in Table 4.

Theorem 3. Any full-rank affine subspace of $\mathfrak{g}_{3.6}$ (type VIII) is $\mathfrak{L}$-equivalent to exactly one of $E_{3}+\left\langle E_{2}+E_{3}\right\rangle, \alpha E_{2}+\left\langle E_{3}\right\rangle, \alpha E_{1}+\left\langle E_{2}\right\rangle, \alpha E_{3}+\left\langle E_{2}\right\rangle,\left\langle E_{1}, E_{2}\right\rangle$, $\left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle, E_{3}+\left\langle E_{1}, E_{2}+E_{3}\right\rangle, \alpha E_{1}+\left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle$, and $\alpha E_{3}+\left\langle E_{1}, E_{2}\right\rangle$. Any full-rank affine subspace of $\mathfrak{g}_{3.7}$ (type $I X$ ) is $\mathfrak{L}$-equivalent to exactly one of $\alpha E_{1}+\left\langle E_{2}\right\rangle$, $\left\langle E_{1}, E_{2}\right\rangle$, and $\alpha E_{1}+\left\langle E_{2}, E_{3}\right\rangle$. Here $\alpha>0$ parametrises families of class representatives, each different value corresponding to a distinct non-equivalent representative.

## 4 Control affine systems and classification

A left-invariant control affine system $\Sigma$ is a control system of the form

$$
\dot{g}=g \Xi(\mathbf{1}, u)=g\left(A+u_{1} B_{1}+\cdots+u_{\ell} B_{\ell}\right), \quad g \in \mathrm{G}, u \in \mathbb{R}^{\ell} .
$$

Here $G$ is a (real, finite-dimensional) Lie group with Lie algebra $\mathfrak{g}$. Also, the parametrisation map $\Xi(\mathbf{1}, \cdot): \mathbb{R}^{\ell} \rightarrow \mathfrak{g}$ is an injective affine map (i.e., $B_{1}, \ldots, B_{\ell}$ are linearly independent). The "product" $g \Xi(\mathbf{1}, u)$ is to be understood as $T_{1} L_{g} \cdot \Xi(\mathbf{1}, u)$, where $L_{g}: \mathrm{G} \rightarrow \mathrm{G}, h \mapsto g h$ is the left translation by $g$. Note that the dynamics $\Xi: \mathrm{G} \times \mathbb{R}^{\ell} \rightarrow T \mathrm{G}$ are invariant under left translations, i.e., $\Xi(g, u)=g \Xi(\mathbf{1}, u)$. We shall denote such a system by $\Sigma=(G, \Xi)$ (cf. [2]).

The admissible controls are piecewise-continuous maps $u(\cdot):[0, T] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{\ell}$. A trajectory for an admissible control $u(\cdot):[0, T] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{\ell}$ is an absolutely continuous curve $g(\cdot):[0, T] \rightarrow \mathrm{G}$ such that $\dot{g}(t)=g(t) \Xi(\mathbf{1}, u(t))$ for almost every $t \in[0, T]$. We say that a system $\Sigma$ is controllable if for any $g_{0}, g_{1} \in \mathrm{G}$, there exists a trajectory $g(\cdot):[0, T] \rightarrow \mathrm{G}$ such that $g(0)=g_{0}$ and $g(T)=g_{1}$. For more details about (invariant) control systems see, e.g., [ $1,10,11,15,16]$.

The image set $\Gamma=\operatorname{im} \Xi(\mathbf{1}, \cdot)$, called the trace of $\Sigma$, is an affine subspace of $\mathfrak{g}$. Specifically, $\Gamma=A+\Gamma^{0}=A+\left\langle B_{1}, \ldots, B_{\ell}\right\rangle$. A system $\Sigma$ is called homogeneous if $A \in \Gamma^{0}$, and inhomogeneous otherwise. Furthermore, $\Sigma$ is said to have full rank if its trace (as an affine subspace) has full rank. Henceforth, we assume that all systems under consideration have full rank. (The full-rank condition is a necessary condition for a system $\Sigma$ to be controllable.)

An important equivalence relation for invariant control systems is that of detached feedback equivalence. Two systems are detached feedback equivalent if there exists a "detached" feedback transformation which transforms the first system to the second (see $[3,9]$ ). Two detached feedback equivalent control systems have the same set of trajectories (up to a diffeomorphism in the state space) which are parametrised differently by admissible controls. More precisely, let $\Sigma=(\mathrm{G}, \Xi)$ and $\Sigma^{\prime}=\left(\mathrm{G}^{\prime}, \Xi^{\prime}\right)$ be left-invariant control affine systems. $\Sigma$ and $\Sigma^{\prime}$ are called
locally detached feedback equivalent (shortly $D F_{\text {loc }}$-equivalent) if there exist open neighbourhoods $N$ and $N^{\prime}$ of identity (in G and $\mathrm{G}^{\prime}$, respectively) and a diffeomorphism $\Phi: N \times \mathbb{R}^{\ell} \rightarrow N^{\prime} \times \mathbb{R}^{\ell^{\prime}},(g, u) \mapsto(\phi(g), \varphi(u))$ such that $\phi(\mathbf{1})=\mathbf{1}$ and $T_{g} \phi \cdot \Xi(g, u)=\Xi^{\prime}(\phi(g), \varphi(u))$ for $g \in N$ and $u \in \mathbb{R}^{\ell}$. It turns out that $\Sigma$ and $\Sigma^{\prime}$ are $D F_{l o c}$-equivalent if and only if there exists a Lie algebra isomorphism $\psi: \mathfrak{g} \rightarrow \mathfrak{g}^{\prime}$ such that $\psi \cdot \Gamma=\Gamma^{\prime}($ see $[3])$.

For the purpose of classification, we may assume that $\Sigma$ and $\Sigma^{\prime}$ have the same Lie algebra $\mathfrak{g}$. Then $\Sigma$ and $\Sigma^{\prime}$ are $D F_{l o c}$-equivalent if and only if their traces $\Gamma$ and $\Gamma^{\prime}$ are $\mathfrak{L}$-equivalent. This reduces the problem of classifying under $D F_{l o c^{-}}$ equivalence to that of classifying under $\mathfrak{L}$-equivalence. Suppose $\left\{\Gamma_{i}: i \in I\right\}$ is an exhaustive collection of (non-equivalent) class representatives (i.e., any affine subspace is $\mathfrak{L}$-equivalent to exactly one $\Gamma_{i}$ ). For each $i \in I$, we can easily find a system $\Sigma_{i}=\left(\mathrm{G}, \Xi_{i}\right)$ with trace $\Gamma_{i}$. Then any system $\Sigma$ is $D F_{l o c}$-equivalent to exactly one $\Sigma_{i}$.

Example. The Heisenberg group

$$
\mathrm{H}_{3}=\left\{\left[\begin{array}{lll}
1 & y & x \\
0 & 1 & z \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right]: x, y, z \in \mathbb{R}\right\}
$$

is a (nilpotent) three-dimensional Lie group. Its Lie algebra $\mathfrak{h}_{3}$ has (ordered) basis

$$
E_{1}=\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right], \quad E_{2}=\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right], \quad E_{3}=\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right] .
$$

The commutator relations are $\left[E_{2}, E_{3}\right]=E_{1},\left[E_{3}, E_{1}\right]=0$, and $\left[E_{1}, E_{2}\right]=0$. Thus $\mathfrak{h}_{3} \cong \mathfrak{g}_{3.1}$. Hence, any system $\Sigma=\left(\mathrm{H}_{3}, \Xi\right)$ is $D F_{\text {loc }}$-equivalent to exactly one $\Sigma_{i}=\left(\mathrm{H}_{3}, \Xi_{i}\right)$, where

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\Xi_{1}(g, u)=g\left(E_{2}+u E_{3}\right) & \Xi_{2}(g, u)=g\left(u_{1} E_{2}+u_{2} E_{3}\right) \\
\Xi_{3}(g, u)=g\left(E_{1}+u_{1} E_{2}+u_{2} E_{3}\right) & \Xi_{4}(g, u)=g\left(E_{3}+u_{1} E_{1}+u_{2} E_{3}\right) .
\end{array}
$$

## References

[1] Agrachev A. A., Sachkov Y. L. Control Theory from the Geometric Viewpoint. SpringerVerlag, Berlin, 2004.
[2] Biggs R., Remsing C. C. A category of control systems. An. Ştiinţ. Univ. "Ovidius" Constanţa Ser. Mat., 2012, 20, 355-368.
[3] Biggs R., Remsing C. C. On the equivalence of control systems on Lie groups. Submitted.
[4] Biggs R., Remsing C. C. Control affine systems on semisimple three-dimensional Lie groups. An. Ştiinţ. Univ. Al. I. Cuza Iaşi. Mat. (N. S.), 2013, 59, 65-80.
[5] Biggs R., Remsing C. C. Control affine systems on solvable three-dimensional Lie groups, I. Submitted.
[6] Biggs, R., Remsing, C. C. Control affine systems on solvable three-dimensional Lie groups, II. Note Mat., 2013, 33 (to appear).
[7] Ha K. Y., Lee J. B. Left invariant metrics and curvatures on simply connected threedimensional Lie groups. Math. Nachr., 2009, 282, 868-898.
[8] Harvey A. Automorphisms of the Bianchi model Lie groups. J. Math. Phys., 1979, 20, 251-253.
[9] Jakubczyk B. Equivalence and invariants of nonlinear control systems. In: "Nonlinear Controllability and Optimal Control" (Sussmann H. J., Ed.), M. Dekker, New York, 1990, 177-218.
[10] Jurdjevic V. Geometric Control Theory. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 1997.
[11] Jurdjevic V., Sussmann H. J. Control systems on Lie groups. J. Differential Equations, 1972, 12, 313-329.
[12] Krasiński A., Behr C. G., Schücking E., Estabrook F. B., Wahlquist H. D., Ellis G.F. R., Jantzen R., Kundt W. The Bianchi classification in the Schücking-Behr approach. Gen. Relativity Gravitation, 2003, 35, 475-489.
[13] MacCallum M. A. H. On the classification of the real four-dimensional Lie algebras. In: "On Einstein's Path: Essays in Honour of E. Schücking" (Harvey A., Ed.), Springer-Verlag, New York, 1999, 299-317.
[14] Popovych R. O., Boyco V. M., Nesterenko M. O., Lutfullin M. W. Realizations of real low-dimensional Lie algebras. J. Phys. A, 2003, 36, 7337-7360.
[15] Remsing C. C. Optimal control and Hamilton-Poisson formalism. Int. J. Pure Appl. Math., 2010, 59, 11-17.
[16] Sachkov Y. L. Control theory on Lie groups. J. Math. Sci. (N. Y.), 2009, 156, 381-439.

Rory Biggs, Claudiu C. Remsing
Rhodes University, PO Box 94
6140 Grahamstown, South Africa
E-mail: rorybiggs@gmail.com, c.c.remsing@ru.ac.za

# Solving the games generated by the informational extended strategies of the players 

Boris Hâncu


#### Abstract

In this article we study the non-informational extended games which are generated by the two-directional informational flow extended strategies of the players. The theorem on the existence of the Nash equilibrium profiles in this type of games is also proved.


Mathematics subject classification: $91 \mathrm{~A} 10,47 \mathrm{H} 04,47 \mathrm{H} 10$.
Keywords and phrases: Noncooperative game, payoff function, set of strategies, informational extended games, normal form game, Nash equilibrium, best response mapping, point-to-set mapping, fixed point theorem.

## Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Gamma=\left\langle I ; X_{p}, p \in I ; H_{p}: X \rightarrow \mathbb{R}\right\rangle \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

be the strategic form or normal form of the static noncooperative games with complete and imperfect information ${ }^{1}$ where $I=\{1,2, \ldots, n\}$ is the set of players, $X_{p}$ is a set of available alternatives of the player $p \in I, H_{p}: X_{p} \rightarrow R$ is the payoff function of the player $p \in I$ and $X=\prod_{p \in I} X_{i}$ is the set of strategy profiles for the game. In [1] the author studied informational extensions of the games (1), generated by a one-way directional informational flow, denoted by $j \xrightarrow{\text { inf }} i$, which means: the player $i$, and only he, knows exactly what value of the strategy will be chosen by the player $j$, and two-directional informational flow, denoted by $i \stackrel{\text { inf }}{\leftrightarrows} j$, which means ${ }^{2}$ : at any time simultaneously player $i$ knows exactly what value of the strategy will be chosen by the player $j$ and player $j$ knows exactly what value of the strategy will be chosen by the player $i$. We mention that the game is static, in other words, the order of the chosen strategies is not significant. The players do not known the informational type of the other players, so the player $i$ (respectively $j$ ) does not know that the player $j$ (respectively $i$ ) knows what value of the strategies will be chosen. In the general case [2, 3] the set of the informational extended strategies of the player $i$ (respectively $j$ ) is the set of the functions $\Theta_{i}=\left\{\theta_{i}: X_{j} \rightarrow X_{i}\right\}$ (respectively $\Theta_{j}=\left\{\theta_{j}: X_{i} \rightarrow X_{j}\right\}$ )
(C) Boris Hâncu, 2012
${ }^{1}$ So the players know exactly their and of the other players payoff functions and they know the sets of strategies. Players do not know what kind of the strategy will be chosen by the players.
${ }^{2}$ Notation $i \stackrel{\inf }{\leftrightarrows} j$ means the following: "the information about the concrete chosen value of the strategies of player $i$ will be transmitted to the player $j$ " and vice versa "the information about the concrete chosen value of the strategies of player $j$ will be transmitted to the player $i$ ".
such that $\forall x_{j} \in X_{j}, \theta_{i}\left(x_{j}\right) \in X_{i}$ (respectively $\forall x_{i} \in X_{i}, \theta_{j}\left(x_{i}\right) \in X_{j}$ ). Following [1], if in the game $\Gamma$ the sets of strategies $X_{i}=\left\{x_{i}^{1}, \ldots, x_{i}^{l}, \ldots, x_{i}^{\left|X_{i}\right|}\right\}$ and $X_{j}=\left\{x_{j}^{1}, \ldots, x_{j}^{l}, \ldots, x_{j}^{\left|X_{j}\right|}\right\}$ of the players $i$ and $j$ are at most countable, $H_{p}$ is the discrete payoff function of the player $p \in I$, the sets of the informational extended strategies can be represented as $\Theta_{i}=\left\{\theta_{i}^{\alpha}: X_{j} \rightarrow X_{i}^{\alpha}, \alpha=1, \ldots, \varkappa_{i}\right\}$ and respectively $\Theta_{j}=\left\{\theta_{j}^{\beta}: X_{i} \rightarrow X_{j}^{\beta}, \beta=1, \ldots, \varkappa_{j}\right\}$, where

$$
\left.\begin{array}{l}
X_{i}^{\alpha}=\left\{\left(x_{i}^{\alpha_{1}}, x_{i}^{\alpha_{2}}, \ldots, x_{i}^{\alpha_{l}}, \ldots, x_{i}^{\alpha}\left|x_{j}\right|\right.\right.
\end{array}\right): x_{i}^{\alpha_{l}} \in X_{i}, \forall l=\overline{\left.\overline{1,\left|X_{j}\right|}\right\} \subseteq X_{i},}, ~ \begin{aligned}
& X_{j}^{\beta}=\left\{\left(x_{j}^{\beta_{1}}, x_{j}^{\beta_{2}}, \ldots, x_{j}^{\beta_{k}}, \ldots, x_{j}^{\beta_{j}\left|x_{j}\right|}\right): x_{j}^{\beta_{k}} \in X_{i}, \forall k=\overline{1,\left|X_{j}\right|}\right\} \subseteq X_{j}
\end{aligned}
$$

for any $\alpha=1, \ldots, \varkappa_{i}=\left|X_{i}\right|^{\left|X_{j}\right|}, \beta=1, \ldots, \varkappa_{j}=\left|X_{j}\right|^{\left|X_{i}\right|}$. Thereby, the informational extended strategies of the player $i$ are functions $\theta_{i}^{\alpha}: X_{j} \rightarrow X_{i}^{\alpha}$ such that for all $x_{j}^{l} \in X_{j}$ there is $x_{i}^{\alpha_{l}} \in X_{i}$ such that $\theta_{i}^{\alpha}\left(x_{j}^{l}\right)=x_{i}^{\alpha_{l}}$ and it means the following: the player $i$ will choose the non-informational extended strategy $x_{i}^{\alpha_{l}} \in X_{i}^{\alpha}$ in case the player $j$ will choose the non-informational extended strategy $x_{j}^{l} \in X_{j}$. Accordingly the informational extended strategies of the player $j$ are functions $\theta_{j}^{\beta}: X_{i} \rightarrow X_{j}^{\beta}$ such that for all $x_{i}^{k} \in X_{i}$ there is $x_{j}^{\beta_{k}} \in X_{j}$ such that $\theta_{j}^{\beta}\left(x_{i}^{k}\right)=x_{j}^{\beta_{k}}$ and it means the following: the player $j$ will choose the non-informational extended strategy $x_{j}^{\beta_{k}} \in X_{j}^{\beta}$ in case the player $i$ will choose the non-informational extended strategy $x_{i}^{k} \in X_{i}$. Under the assumption that the players want maximize their payoffs we define the payoff functions of the player as follows:

$$
\mathcal{H}_{p}\left(\theta_{i}^{\alpha}, \theta_{j}^{\beta}, x_{[-i j]}\right)= \begin{cases}\max _{\left(x_{i}, x_{j}\right) \in\left[g r \theta_{i}^{\alpha} \cap g r \theta_{j}^{\beta}\right]} H_{p}\left(x_{i}, x_{j}, x_{[-i j]}\right) & \text { if } X\left(\theta_{i}^{\alpha}, \theta_{j}^{\beta}\right) \neq \varnothing \\ -\infty & \text { if } X\left(\theta_{i}^{\alpha}, \theta_{j}^{\beta}\right)=\varnothing\end{cases}
$$

Here $X\left(\theta_{i}^{\alpha}, \theta_{j}^{\beta}\right) \subseteq X$ is the set of the strategy profiles of the players in the game (1) "generated" by the informational extended strategies $\theta_{i}^{\alpha}$ and $\theta_{j}^{\beta}, g r \theta_{i}^{\alpha}, g r \theta_{j}^{\beta}$ denotes the graph of the function $\theta_{i}^{\alpha}$ and $\theta_{j}^{\beta}, x_{[-i j]}=\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{i-1}, x_{i+1}, \ldots, x_{j-1}, x_{j+1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$. And finally, the normal form of the two-directional $i \stackrel{\inf }{\leftrightarrows} j$ informational extended game will be $\Gamma(i \stackrel{\inf }{\leftrightarrows} j)=\left\langle I, \Theta_{i}, \Theta_{j},\{X\}_{p \in I \backslash\{i, j\}},\left\{\mathcal{H}_{p}\right\}_{p \in I}\right\rangle$. Also by [1] for the bimatricial game $H_{1}=\left(\begin{array}{lll}3 & 5 & 4 \\ 6 & 7 & 2\end{array}\right), H_{2}=\left(\begin{array}{lll}0 & 5 & 1 \\ 4 & 3 & 2\end{array}\right)$ the normal form of the $1 \stackrel{\inf }{\leftrightarrows} 2$ informational extended game will be the bimatricial game with the following payoff
matrices for the player 1

$$
\mathcal{H}_{1}=\left(\begin{array}{ccccccccc}
3 & 5 & 4 & 3 & 5 & 3 & 4 & 5 & 4 \\
6 & 7 & 2 & 7 & 6 & 2 & 6 & 2 & 7 \\
3 & 5 & 2 & 3 & 5 & 3 & -\infty & 3 & -\infty \\
3 & 7 & 4 & 7 & -\infty & 3 & 4 & -\infty & 7 \\
6 & 5 & 4 & -\infty & 7 & -\infty & 3 & 5 & 4 \\
3 & 7 & 2 & 7 & -\infty & 3 & -\infty & 2 & 7 \\
6 & 7 & 4 & -\infty & 6 & 2 & 6 & 5 & -\infty \\
6 & 7 & 4 & 7 & 6 & -\infty & 6 & -\infty & 7
\end{array}\right)
$$

and for the player 2 correspondingly

$$
\mathcal{H}_{2}=\left(\begin{array}{ccccccccc}
0 & 5 & 1 & 0 & 5 & 0 & 1 & 5 & 1 \\
4 & 3 & 2 & 3 & 4 & 2 & 4 & 2 & 3 \\
0 & 5 & 2 & 0 & 5 & 2 & -\infty & 5 & -\infty \\
0 & 3 & 1 & 3 & -\infty & 0 & 1 & -\infty & 3 \\
4 & 5 & 1 & -\infty & 5 & -\infty & 0 & 5 & 1 \\
0 & 3 & 2 & 3 & -\infty & 2 & -\infty & 2 & 3 \\
4 & 5 & 2 & -\infty & 5 & 2 & 4 & 5 & -\infty \\
4 & 3 & 1 & 3 & 4 & -\infty & 4 & -\infty & 3
\end{array}\right) .
$$

Below the correspondence between Nash equilibrium profiles in the $\Gamma(1 \stackrel{\inf }{\leftrightarrows} 2)$ game and profiles in the $\Gamma$ game is shown:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\theta_{1}^{1}, \theta_{2}^{8}\right) \Rightarrow(1,2) ;\left(\theta_{1}^{2}, \theta_{2}^{1}\right) \Rightarrow(2,1) ;\left(\theta_{1}^{2}, \theta_{2}^{7}\right) \Rightarrow(2,1) ;\left(\theta_{1}^{4}, \theta_{2}^{2}\right) \Rightarrow(2,2) ; \\
& \left(\theta_{1}^{4}, \theta_{2}^{4}\right) \Rightarrow(2,2) ;\left(\theta_{1}^{4}, \theta_{2}^{9}\right) \Rightarrow(2,2) ;\left(\theta_{1}^{5}, \theta_{2}^{5}\right) \Rightarrow(2,1) ;\left(\theta_{1}^{5}, \theta_{2}^{8}\right) \Rightarrow(1,2) ; \\
& \left(\theta_{1}^{6}, \theta_{2}^{2}\right) \Rightarrow(2,2) ;\left(\theta_{1}^{6}, \theta_{2}^{4}\right) \Rightarrow(2,2) ;\left(\theta_{1}^{6}, \theta_{2}^{9}\right) \Rightarrow(2,2) ;\left(\theta_{1}^{7}, \theta_{2}^{2}\right) \Rightarrow(1,2) ; \\
& \left(\theta_{1}^{7}, \theta_{2}^{8}\right) \Rightarrow(1,2) ;\left(\theta_{1}^{8}, \theta_{2}^{1}\right) \Rightarrow(2,1) ;\left(\theta_{1}^{8}, \theta_{2}^{7}\right) \Rightarrow(2,1) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Here the informational extended strategy of the player 1 is the function with the following values:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \theta_{1}^{1}(j)=1 \forall j=1,2,3 ; \theta_{1}^{2}(j)=2 \forall j=1,2,3 ; \theta_{1}^{3}(1)=\theta_{1}^{3}(2)=1, \theta_{1}^{3}(3)=2 \\
& \theta_{1}^{4}(1)=\theta_{1}^{4}(3)=1, \theta_{1}^{4}(2)=2 ; \theta_{1}^{5}(2)=\theta_{1}^{5}(3)=1, \theta_{1}^{5}(1)=2 ; \theta_{1}^{6}(2)= \\
& \theta_{1}^{6}(3)=2, \theta_{1}^{6}(1)=1 ; \theta_{1}^{7}(1)=\theta_{1}^{7}(3)=2, \theta_{1}^{7}(2)=1 ; \theta_{1}^{8}(1)=\theta_{1}^{8}(2)=2, \\
& \theta_{1}^{8}(3)=1
\end{aligned}
$$

and correspondingly for the player 2 :

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \theta_{2}^{1}(i)=1 \forall i=1,2 ; \theta_{2}^{2}(i)=2 \forall i=1,2 ; \theta_{2}^{3}(i)=3 \forall i=1,2 ; \theta_{2}^{4}(1)=1, \\
& \theta_{2}^{4}(2)=2 ; \theta_{2}^{5}(2)=1, \theta_{2}^{5}(1)=2 ; \theta_{2}^{6}(1)=1, \theta_{2}^{6}(2)=3 ; \theta_{2}^{7}(2)=1, \\
& \theta_{2}^{7}(1)=3 ; \theta_{2}^{8}(1)=2, \theta_{2}^{8}(2)=3 ; \theta_{2}^{9}(1)=3, \theta_{2}^{9}(2)=2
\end{aligned}
$$

Remark 1. We have to mention the following: the informational extended game (considered in this article) is not a dynamic game (in terms of the choice of the strategy, but not in terms of the strategies structure) because the strategies are chosen simultaneously.

In this article we study the case when the informational strategies of the players have already been chosen and so appears the necessity to study the informational non-extended game generated by the chosen informational extended strategies. These games differ in: a) the sets of the strategies that are the subsets of the sets of strategies in the initial non-extended informational game; b) how the payoff functions of the players will be constructed.

Let the payoff functions of the players be defined as $\widetilde{H}_{p}: \prod_{p \in I} X_{p} \rightarrow R$ where for all $x_{i} \in X_{i}, x_{j} \in X_{j}, x_{[-i j]} \in X_{[-i j]}$ we have $\widetilde{H}_{p}\left(x_{i}, x_{j}, x_{[-i j]}\right) \equiv$ $H_{p}\left(\theta_{i}\left(x_{j}\right), \theta_{j}\left(x_{i}\right), x_{[-i j]}\right)$.

Definition 1. The game with the following normal form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Gamma\left(\theta_{i}, \theta_{j}\right)=\left\langle I,\left\{X_{p}\right\}_{p \in I},\left\{\widetilde{H}_{p}\right\}_{p \in I}\right\rangle \tag{2}
\end{equation*}
$$

will be called informational non-extended game generated by the informational extended strategies $\theta_{i}$ and $\theta_{j}$.

The game $\Gamma\left(\theta_{i}, \theta_{j}\right)$ is played as follows: independently and simultaneously each player $p \in I$ chooses the informational non-extended strategy $x_{p} \in X_{p}$, after that the players $i$ and $j$ calculate the value of the informational extended strategies $\theta_{i}\left(x_{j}\right)$ and $\theta_{j}\left(x_{j}\right)$, after that each player calculates the payoff values $H_{p}\left(\theta_{i}\left(x_{j}\right), \theta_{j}\left(x_{j}\right), x_{[-i j]}\right)$, and with this the game is finished. To all strategy profiles $\left(x_{i}, x_{j}, x_{[-i j]}\right)$ in the game (2) the following realization $\left(\theta_{i}\left(x_{j}\right), \theta_{j}\left(x_{i}\right), x_{[-i j]}\right)$ in terms of the informational extended strategies will correspond.

We introduce the following definition of the Nash equilibrium profile for normal form game $\Gamma\left(\theta_{i}, \theta_{j}\right)$.

Definition 2. The strategy profile $\left(x_{i}^{*}, x_{j}^{*}, x_{-i j}^{*}\right) \in X$ is called the Nash equilibrium of the game $\Gamma\left(\theta_{i}, \theta_{j}\right)$ if and only if the following conditions are satisfied:

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\widetilde{H}_{i}\left(x_{i}^{*}, x_{j}^{*}, x_{[-i j]}^{*}\right) \geqslant \widetilde{H}_{i}\left(x_{i}, x_{j}^{*}, x_{[-i j]}^{*}\right) \text { for all } x_{i} \in X_{i}, \\
\widetilde{H}_{j}\left(x_{i}^{*}, x_{i}^{*}, x_{[-i j]}^{*}\right) \geqslant \widetilde{H}_{j}\left(x_{i}^{*}, x_{j}, x_{[-i j]}^{*}\right) \text { for all } x_{j} \in X_{j}, \\
\widetilde{H}_{p}\left(x_{i}^{*}, x_{i}^{*}, x_{p}^{*}\right) \geqslant \widetilde{H}_{p}\left(x_{i}^{*}, x_{j}^{*}, x_{p}\right) \text { for all } x_{p} \in X_{p} \text { and for all } p \in I \backslash\{i, j\} .
\end{array}\right.
$$

We denote by $N E\left[\Gamma\left(\theta_{i}, \theta_{j}\right)\right]$ the set of Nash equilibrium profiles of the game $\Gamma\left(\theta_{i}, \theta_{j}\right)$. According to Definition 1 we have that $\left(x_{i}^{*}, x_{j}^{*}, x_{-i j}^{*}\right) \in N E\left[\Gamma\left(\theta_{i}, \theta_{j}\right)\right]$ if
and only if

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
H_{i}\left(\theta_{i}\left(x_{j}^{*}\right), \theta_{j}\left(x_{i}^{*}\right), x_{[-i j]}^{*}\right) \geqslant H_{i}\left(\theta_{i}\left(x_{j}^{*}\right), \theta_{j}\left(x_{i}\right), x_{[-i j]}^{*}\right) \text { for all } x_{i} \in X_{i}, \\
H_{j}\left(\theta_{i}\left(x_{j}^{*}\right), \theta_{j}\left(x_{i}^{*}\right), x_{[-i j]}^{*}\right) \geqslant H_{j}\left(\theta_{i}\left(x_{j}\right), \theta_{j}\left(x_{i}^{*}\right), x_{[-i j]}^{*}\right) \text { for all } x_{j} \in X_{j}, \\
H_{p}\left(\theta_{i}\left(x_{j}^{*}\right), \theta_{j}\left(x_{i}^{*}\right), x_{[-i j]}^{*}\right) \geqslant H_{p}\left(\theta_{i}\left(x_{j}^{*}\right), \theta_{j}\left(x_{i}^{*}\right), x_{p}\right) \text { for all } x_{p} \in X_{p} p \in I \backslash\{i, j\} .
\end{array}\right.
$$

Another, and some times more convenient way of defining Nash equilibrium is via the best response correspondences $B r_{p}: \prod_{k \in I \backslash\{p\}} X_{k} \rightarrow 2^{X_{p}}$ such that:

- for player $i$ :

$$
\begin{aligned}
B r_{i}\left(x_{[-i]}\right)= & \left\{x_{i} \in X_{i}: H_{i}\left(\theta_{i}\left(x_{j}\right), \theta_{j}\left(x_{i}\right), x_{[-i j]}\right) \geq H_{i}\left(\theta_{i}\left(x_{j}\right), \theta_{j}\left(x_{i}^{\prime}\right),\right.\right. \\
& \left.\left.x_{[-i j]}\right) \text { for all } x_{i}^{\prime} \in X_{i}\right\} ;
\end{aligned}
$$

- for player $j$ :

$$
\begin{aligned}
B r_{j}\left(x_{[-j]}\right)= & \left\{x_{j} \in X_{j}: H_{j}\left(\theta_{i}\left(x_{j}\right), \theta_{j}\left(x_{i}\right), x_{[-i j]}\right) \geq H_{j}\left(\theta_{i}\left(x_{j}^{\prime}\right), \theta_{j}\left(x_{i}\right),\right.\right. \\
& \left.\left.x_{[-i j]}\right) \text { for all } x_{j}^{\prime} \in X_{j}\right\} ;
\end{aligned}
$$

- for player $p \neq i, j$ :

$$
\begin{aligned}
B r_{p}\left(x_{[-p]}\right)= & \left\{x_{p} \in X_{p}: H_{p}\left(\theta_{i}\left(x_{j}\right), \theta_{j}\left(x_{i}\right), x_{p}, x_{[-i j p]}\right) \geq H_{p}\left(\theta_{i}\left(x_{j}\right),\right.\right. \\
& \left.\left.\theta_{j}\left(x_{i}\right), x_{p}^{\prime}, x_{[-i j p]}\right) \text { for all } x_{p}^{\prime} \in X_{p}\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Here $2^{X_{p}}$ denotes the set of all subsets of the set $X_{p}$ and $x_{[-i j p]}$ denotes the strategies profiles without the strategies of the players $i, j$ and $p$. If the payoff functions $H_{p}(\cdot),(p=\overline{1, n})$ are continuous on the compact $\prod_{p \in I} X_{p}$ and the functions $\theta_{i}: X_{j} \rightarrow X_{i}, \theta_{j}: X_{i} \rightarrow X_{j}$ are continuous on the compact $X_{j}$ (correspondingly $X_{i}$ ) then the functions $\widetilde{H}_{p}, p=\overline{1, n}$ are continuous on the compact $\prod_{p \in I} X_{p}$ as composite functions. Then according to the Weierstrass theorem we can write

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{Br}_{i}\left(x_{[-i]}\right) & =\operatorname{Arg} \max _{x_{i} \in X_{i}} H_{i}\left(\theta_{i}\left(x_{j}\right), \theta_{j}\left(x_{i}\right), x_{[-i j]}\right), \\
\operatorname{Br}_{j}\left(x_{[-j]}\right) & =\operatorname{Arg} \max _{x_{j} \in X_{j}} H_{j}\left(\theta_{i}\left(x_{j}\right), \theta_{j}\left(x_{i}\right), x_{[-i j]}\right), \\
\operatorname{Br}_{p}\left(x_{[-p]}\right) & =\operatorname{Arg} \max _{x_{p} \in X_{p}} H_{p}\left(\theta_{i}\left(x_{j}\right), \theta_{j}\left(x_{i}\right), x_{p}, x_{[-i j p]}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

for all $p \in I, p \neq i, j$. In this case $\left(x_{i}^{*}, x_{j}^{*}, x_{-i j}^{*}\right) \in N E\left[\Gamma\left(\theta_{i}, \theta_{j}\right)\right]$ if and only if

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
x_{i}^{*} \in B r_{i}\left(x_{[-i]}^{*}\right), \\
x_{j}^{*} \in B r_{j}\left(x_{[-j]}^{*}\right), \\
x_{p}^{*} \in B r_{p}\left(x_{[-p]}^{*}\right) \forall p \neq i, j .
\end{array}\right.
$$

Construct the point to set mapping $B r: X \rightarrow 2^{X}$ so that for all $x \in X$,

$$
\operatorname{Br}(x)=\left(\operatorname{Br}_{1}\left(x_{[-1]}\right), \ldots, B r_{i}\left(x_{[-i]}\right), \ldots, B r_{n}\left(x_{[-n]}\right)\right) \subseteq X
$$

Then

$$
\left(x_{i}^{*}, x_{i}^{*}, x_{[-i j]}^{*}\right) \in N E\left[\Gamma\left(\theta_{i}, \theta_{j}\right)\right]
$$

if and only if

$$
\left(x_{i}^{*}, x_{i}^{*}, x_{[-i j]}^{*}\right) \in \operatorname{Br}\left(x_{i}^{*}, x_{i}^{*}, x_{[-i j]}^{*}\right),
$$

that is $\left(x_{i}^{*}, x_{i}^{*}, x_{[-i j]}^{*}\right)$ is the fixed point of the mapping Br .
We shall analyze in more details the case of the bimatricial game. So we consider the following normal form game

$$
\Gamma=\left\langle I=\{1, \ldots, n\}, J=\{1, \ldots, m\}, H_{1}=\left\|a_{i j}\right\|_{i \in I}^{j \in J}, H_{2}=\left\|b_{i j}\right\|_{i \in I}^{j \in J}\right\rangle .
$$

For this game we construct the game according to Definition 1. The informational extended strategies are $\theta_{1}: J \rightarrow I$ and $\theta_{2}: I \rightarrow J$, the payoff matrices are $\widetilde{H}_{1}=$ $\left\|\widetilde{a}_{i j}\right\|_{i \in I}^{j \in J}, \widetilde{H}_{2}=\left\|\widetilde{b}_{i j}\right\|_{i \in I}^{j \in J}$ where $\widetilde{a}_{i j}=a_{\theta_{1}(j) \theta_{2}(i)}$ and $\widetilde{b}_{i j}=b_{\theta_{1}(j) \theta_{2}(i)}$ for all $i \in I$, $j \in J$. So we will obtain the following normal form game

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \Gamma\left(\theta_{1}, \theta_{2}\right)=\left\langle I=\{1, \ldots, n\}, J=\{1, \ldots, m\}, \widetilde{H}_{1}=\left\|\widetilde{a}_{i j}\right\|_{i \in I}^{j \in J}, \widetilde{H}_{2}=\left\|\widetilde{b}_{i j}\right\|_{i \in I}^{j \in J}\right\rangle \equiv \\
& \equiv\left\langle I=\{1, \ldots, n\}, J=\{1, \ldots, m\}, \widetilde{H}_{1}=\left\|a_{\theta_{1}(j) \theta_{2}(i)}\right\|_{i \in I}^{j \in J}, \widetilde{H}_{2}=\left\|b_{\theta_{1}(j) \theta_{2}(i)}\right\|_{i \in I}^{j \in J}\right\rangle .
\end{aligned}
$$

The strategy profile $\left(i^{e}, j^{e}\right) \in N E\left(\Gamma\left(\theta_{1}, \theta_{2}\right)\right)$ if and only if

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\widetilde{a}_{i^{e} j^{e}} \geqslant \widetilde{a}_{i j^{e}} \text { for all } i \in I, \\
\widetilde{b}_{i^{e} j^{e}} \geqslant \widetilde{b}_{i^{e} j} \text { for all } j \in J,
\end{array}\right.
$$

and according to Definition 1 we have that

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
a_{\theta_{1}\left(j^{e} e\right.} \theta_{2}\left(e^{e}\right) \geqslant a_{\theta_{1}\left(j^{e}\right) \theta_{2}(i)} \text { for all } i \in I, \\
b_{\theta_{1}\left(j^{e}\right) \theta_{2}\left(i^{e}\right)} \geqslant b_{\theta_{1}(j) \theta_{2}\left(i^{e}\right)} \text { for all } j \in J .
\end{array}\right.
$$

From the set of all informational extended strategies of the players $i$ and $j$ we will highlight the following class of "best responses" strategies

$$
\begin{align*}
& \widetilde{\Theta}_{i}=\left\{\widetilde{\theta}_{i}: X_{j} \rightarrow X_{i} \mid \forall x_{j} \in X_{j}, \widetilde{\theta}_{i}\left(x_{j}\right)=\arg \max _{x_{i} \in X_{i}} H_{i}\left(x_{i}, x_{j}, x_{[-i j]}\right)\right\},  \tag{3}\\
& \widetilde{\Theta}_{j}=\left\{\widetilde{\theta}_{j}: X_{i} \rightarrow X_{j} \mid \forall x_{i} \in X_{i}, \widetilde{\theta}_{j}\left(x_{i}\right)=\arg \max _{x_{j} \in X_{j}} H_{j}\left(x_{i}, x_{j}, x_{[-i j]}\right)\right\} . \tag{4}
\end{align*}
$$

We consider now the following examples of the informational non-extended game $\Gamma\left(\theta_{i}, \theta_{j}\right)$ generated by the strategies type (3)-(4) of the players.

Example 1. Let us consider the two person game for which $X=[0,1], Y=$ $[0,1], H_{1}(x, y)=\frac{3}{2} x y-x^{2}, H_{2}(x, y)=\frac{3}{2} x y-y^{2}$ are the sets of strategies and the payoff functions of the players. We construct the normal form game $\Gamma\left(\theta_{i}, \theta_{j}\right)$ generated by the informational extended strategies type (3)-(4) and determine the Nash equilibrium solution.

Solution. We determine the equilibrium profile using the "best response" mapping. We derive the best response (reaction) function for each player given the other players strategy. Because the problem is symmetric, first we will show only for player 1 and then apply the result to the case for player 2 . First order condition will give us that $B r_{1}(y)=\operatorname{Arg} \max _{x \in[0,1]} H_{1}(x, y)=\left\{x \in[0,1] / x=\frac{3}{4} y\right\}$ where $B r_{1}(y)$ is the best response correspondence for player 1 . Similarly, the best response corresponding to player 2 is $\operatorname{Br} r_{2}(x)=\operatorname{Arg} \max _{y \in[0,1]} H_{2}(x, y)=\left\{y \in[0,1] / y=\frac{3}{4} x\right\}$. So the solution of the problem $\left\{\begin{array}{l}x^{*} \in B r_{1}\left(y^{*}\right) \\ y^{*} \in B r_{2}\left(x^{*}\right)\end{array}\right.$ is $x^{*}=y^{*}=0$. Consider the informational non-extended game generated by the informational extended strategies of the twodirectional informational flow type $1 \stackrel{\inf }{\leftrightarrows} 2$. As informational extended strategies we will use the functions $\theta_{1}: Y \rightarrow X$ where $\forall y \in Y, \theta_{1}(y)=\arg \max _{x \in X} H_{1}(x, y)$, respectively $\theta_{2}: X \rightarrow Y$ where $\forall x \in X, \theta_{2}(x)=\arg \max _{y \in Y} H_{2}(x, y)$. Using the necessary condition of optimality we obtain that $\theta_{1}(y)=\frac{3}{4} y \forall y \in[0,1]$ and $\theta_{2}(x)=\frac{3}{4} x \forall x \in[0,1]$. Thus $\widetilde{H}_{1}(x, y)=\frac{3}{2} \theta_{1}(y) \theta_{2}(x)-\left(\theta_{1}(y)\right)^{2}=\frac{3}{2}\left(\frac{3}{4} y\right)\left(\frac{3}{4} x\right)-\left(\frac{3}{4} y\right)^{2}=\frac{27}{32} x y-\frac{9}{16} y^{2}$ and $\widetilde{H}_{2}(x, y)=\frac{3}{2} \theta_{1}(y) \theta_{2}(x)-\left(\theta_{2}(x)\right)^{2}=\frac{3}{2}\left(\frac{3}{4} y\right)\left(\frac{3}{4} x\right)-\left(\frac{3}{4} x\right)^{2}=\frac{27}{32} x y-\frac{9}{16} x^{2}$. So we obtain the following normal form game $\Gamma\left(\theta_{1}, \theta_{2}\right)=\left\langle X, Y, \widetilde{H}_{1}, \widetilde{H}_{2}\right\rangle$. Determine the equilibrium profile of the game $\Gamma\left(\theta_{1}, \theta_{2}\right)$. According to the definition $\left(x^{*}, y^{*}\right) \in N E\left[\Gamma\left(\theta_{1}, \theta_{2}\right)\right]$ if and only if $\left\{\begin{array}{c}\widetilde{H}_{1}\left(x^{*}, y^{*}\right) \geqslant \widetilde{H}_{1}\left(x, y^{*}\right) \forall x \in X, \\ \widetilde{H}_{2}\left(x^{*}, y^{*}\right) \geqslant \widetilde{H}_{2}\left(x^{*}, y\right) \forall y \in Y .\end{array}\right.$ So we have

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\frac{3}{2} \theta_{1}\left(y^{*}\right) \theta_{2}\left(x^{*}\right)-\left(\theta_{1}\left(y^{*}\right)\right)^{2} \geqslant \frac{3}{2} \theta_{1}\left(y^{*}\right) \theta_{2}(x)-\left(\theta_{1}\left(y^{*}\right)\right)^{2} \forall x \in X \\
\frac{3}{2} \theta_{1}\left(y^{*}\right) \theta_{2}\left(x^{*}\right)-\left(\theta_{1}\left(y^{*}\right)\right)^{2} \geqslant \frac{3}{2} \theta_{1}(y) \theta_{2}\left(x^{*}\right)-\left(\theta_{2}\left(x^{*}\right)\right)^{2} \forall y \in Y
\end{array}\right.
$$

and finally

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\frac{27}{32} x^{*} y^{*}-\frac{9}{16} y^{* 2}=\max _{x \in[0,1]}\left\{\frac{27}{32} x y^{*}-\frac{9}{16}\left(y^{*}\right)^{2}\right\} \\
\frac{27}{32} x^{*} y^{*}-\frac{9}{16} y^{* 2}=\max _{y \in[0,1]}\left\{\frac{27}{32} x^{*} y-\frac{9}{16}\left(x^{*}\right)^{2}\right\}
\end{array}\right.
$$

Thus the Nash equilibrium profile is $\left(x^{*}, y^{*}\right)=(1,1)$, that is $N E\left[\Gamma\left(\theta_{1}, \theta_{2}\right)\right]=$ $\{(1,1)\}$ while $N E[\Gamma]=\{(0,0)\}$.
Example 2. We consider the following bimatricial game $H_{1}=\left(\begin{array}{lll}3 & 5 & 4 \\ 6 & 7 & 2\end{array}\right), H_{2}=$
$\left(\begin{array}{lll}0 & 5 & 1 \\ 4 & 3 & 2\end{array}\right)$. We construct the normal form game generated by the informational extended strategies of type (3)-(4) and we determine the Nash equilibrium profiles.

Solution. The strategies of the type (3)-(4) in the game $\Gamma(2 \stackrel{\inf }{\leftrightarrows} 1)$ are $i^{*}(j)=$ $\arg \max _{i} a_{i j}=\left\{\begin{array}{l}1 \text { if } j=3, \\ 2 \text { if } j=1,2\end{array}\right.$ and $j^{*}(i)=\arg \max _{j} b_{i j}=\left\{\begin{array}{l}2 \text { if } i=1, \\ 1 \text { if } i=2 .\end{array}\right.$ We construct the game $\Gamma\left(i^{*}, j^{*}\right)$ according to Definition 1. In the table below the correspondence between the strategies profile in the informational non-extended game (initial game) and the strategies profile generated by the informational extended strategies $i^{*}$ and $j^{*}$ is presented

| $(i, j)$ | $(1,1)$ | $(1,2)$ | $(1,3)$ | $(2,1)$ | $(2,2)$ | $(2,3)$ |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| $\left(i^{*}(j), j^{*}(i)\right)$ | $(2,2)$ | $(2,2)$ | $(1,2)$ | $(2,1)$ | $(2,1)$ | $(1,1)$ |

Then the payoff matrices will be $\widetilde{H}_{1}=\left\|a_{i^{*}(j) j^{*}(i)}\right\|_{i \in I}^{\mid j \in J}=\left(\begin{array}{lll}7 & 7 & 5 \\ 6 & 6 & 3\end{array}\right)$, $\widetilde{H}_{2}=\left\|b_{i^{*}(j) j^{*}(i)}\right\|_{i \in I}^{j \in J}=\left(\begin{array}{lll}3 & 3 & 5 \\ 4 & 4 & 0\end{array}\right)$ and so we have the following normal form game

$$
\Gamma\left(i^{*},, j^{*}\right)=\left\langle I=\{1,2\}, J=\{1,2,3\}, \quad \widetilde{H}_{1}=\left(\begin{array}{lll}
7 & 7 & 5 \\
6 & 6 & 3
\end{array}\right), \quad \widetilde{H}_{2}=\left(\begin{array}{lll}
3 & 3 & 5 \\
4 & 4 & 0
\end{array}\right)\right\rangle .
$$

The game is done in the following way. In case the players choose the informational extended strategies $i^{*}$ and $j^{*}$, then the game (for players 1 and 2) like "if-then" starts, i.e. "if the player 1 chooses the line 1 , then the player 2, knowing this, chooses the column 2 and simultaneously, if the player 2 chooses the column 1 , then the player 1 , knowing this, chooses the line 2 etc. We note that the equilibrium profile in the game $\Gamma\left(i^{*}, j^{*}\right)$ is $\left(i^{e}, j^{e}\right)=(1,3)$ and $\widetilde{H}_{1}(1,3)=5, \widetilde{H}_{2}(1,3)=$ 5. To this profile corresponds the following profile in the informational extended strategy $\left(i^{*}\left(j^{e}\right), j^{*}\left(i^{e}\right)\right)=\left(i^{*}(3), j^{*}(1)\right)=(1,2)$ for which we have that $H_{1}(1,2)=5$, $H_{2}(1,2)=5$. According to the definition of the Nash equilibrium profile $\left(i^{e}, j^{e}\right)$ we have that

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{c}
a_{i^{*}\left(j^{e}\right) j^{*}\left(i^{e}\right) \geqslant} \geqslant a_{i^{*}\left(j^{e}\right) j^{*}(i)} \text { for all } i=1,2, \\
b_{i^{*}\left(j^{e}\right) j^{*}\left(i^{e}\right)} \geqslant b_{i^{*}(j) j^{*}\left(i^{e}\right)} \text { for all } j=1,2,3,
\end{array}\right.
$$

from which we deduce the following relations:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left\{\widetilde{a}_{13}=5=a_{i^{*}(3) j^{*}(1)}>\widetilde{a}_{23}=3=a_{i^{*}(3) j^{*}(2)}=a_{11}=3,\right. \\
& \left\{\begin{array}{l}
\widetilde{b}_{13}=5=b_{i^{*}(3) j^{*}(1)}>\widetilde{b}_{11}=3=b_{i^{*}(1) j^{*}(1)}=b_{22}=3, \\
\widetilde{b}_{13}=5=b_{i^{*}(3) j^{*}(1)}>\widetilde{b}_{12}=3=b_{i^{*}(2) j^{*}(1)}=b_{22}=3 .
\end{array}\right.
\end{aligned}
$$

So we have shown that $N E\left[\Gamma\left(i^{*}, j^{*}\right)\right]=\{(1,3)\}$.

Remark 2. If the normal form $\Gamma\left(i^{*}, j^{*}\right)$ has already been constructed, then the equilibrium profile is determined using the matrices $\widetilde{H}_{1}$ and $\widetilde{H}_{2}$, otherwise, using the elements $a_{i^{*}(j) j^{*}(i)}, b_{i^{*}(j) j^{*}(i)}$ of the matrices of the game $\Gamma$.

We begin by proving Nash's Theorem about the existence of a strategy equilibrium profile in the normal form game $\Gamma\left(\theta_{i}, \theta_{j}\right)$ first giving some remarks about the Kakutani's fixed point theorem. Kakutani's theorem states [4]: Let $S$ be a non-empty, compact and convex subset of the Euclidean space $R^{n}$. Let $\varphi: S \rightarrow 2^{S}$ be a set-valued function on $S$ with a closed graph and the property that $\varphi(x)$ is non-empty and convex for all $x \in S$. Then $\varphi$ has a fixed point.

The Kakutani fixed point theorem is a fixed-point theorem for point-to-set mapping. It provides sufficient conditions for a point-to-set mapping defined on a convex, compact subset of a Euclidean space to have a fixed point, i.e. a point which is mapped to a set containing it. The Kakutani fixed point theorem is a generalization of Brouwer fixed point theorem. The Brouwer fixed point theorem is a fundamental result in topology which proves the existence of fixed points for continuous functions defined on compact, convex subsets of Euclidean spaces. Kakutani theorem extends this to point-to-set mapping.

Mathematician John Nash used the Kakutani fixed point theorem to prove a major result in game theory. Stated informally, the theorem implies the existence of a Nash equilibrium in every finite game with mixed strategies for any number of players. In this case, $S$ is the set of tuples of strategies chosen by each player in a game. The function $\varphi(x)$ gives a new tuple where each player's strategy is his best response to other players' strategies at $x$. Since there may be a number of responses which are equally good, $\varphi$ is set-valued rather than single-valued. Then the Nash equilibrium of the game is defined as a fixed point of $\varphi$, i.e. a tuple of strategies where each player's strategy is a best response to the strategies of the other players. Kakutani's theorem ensures that this fixed point exists.

Let us prove the following theorem.
Theorem. Let $\Gamma\left(\theta_{i}, \theta_{j}\right)=\left\langle I,\left\{X_{p}\right\}_{p \in I},\left\{\widetilde{H}_{p}\right\}_{p \in I}\right\rangle$ be the normal form of the informational non-extended game generated by the informational extended strategies using the $i \stackrel{\inf }{\leftrightarrows} j$ type flow of information, where for all $x_{i} \in X_{i}, x_{j} \in X_{j}, x_{[-i j]} \in$ $X_{[-i j]}$ we have $\widetilde{H}_{p}\left(x_{i}, x_{j}, x_{[-i j]}\right) \equiv H_{p}\left(\theta_{i}\left(x_{j}\right), \theta_{j}\left(x_{i}\right), x_{[-i j]}\right)$. Let this game satisfy the following conditions:

1) the $X_{p}$ is a non-empty compact and convex subset of the finite-dimensional Euclidean space for all $p \in I$;
2) the functions $\theta_{i}$ (correspondingly $\theta_{j}$ ) are continuous on $X_{j}$ (correspondingly on $X_{i}$ ) and the functions $H_{p}$ are continuous on $X$ for all $p \in I$.
3) the functions $\theta_{i}$ (correspondingly $\theta_{j}$ ) are quasi-concave on $X_{j}$ (correspondingly on $X_{i}$ ), the functions $H_{p}$ are quasi-concave on $X_{p}, p \in I \backslash\{i, j\}$ and monotonically increasing on $X_{i} \times X_{j}$.

Then $N E\left[\Gamma\left(\theta_{i}, \theta_{j}\right)\right] \neq \emptyset$.
Proof. If we define the following correspondence (point-to-set mapping) $\mathrm{Br}: \mathrm{X} \rightarrow$ $X$ such that $\operatorname{Br}(x)=\left(B r_{1}\left(x_{[-1]}\right), \ldots, B r_{i}\left(x_{[-i]}\right), \ldots, B r_{n}\left(x_{[-n]}\right)\right)$ then if $x^{*} \in$ $\operatorname{Br}\left(x^{*}\right)$, then $x_{i}^{*} \in \operatorname{Br}\left(x_{[-i]}^{*}\right)$ for all $i \in I$ and hence $x^{*} \in N E$. To prove this theorem we can show that: a) the $X$ is a non-empty compact and convex subset of the Euclidean finite-dimensional space and b) the set-valued mapping $\mathrm{Br}: X \rightarrow X$ has a closed graph, that is, if $\left\{x^{k}, y^{k}\right\} \rightarrow\{x, y\}$ with $y^{k} \in \operatorname{Br}\left(x^{n}\right)$, then $y \in \operatorname{Br}(x)$, and the set $\operatorname{Br}(x)$ is nonempty, convex and compact for all $x \in X$. According to the Tikhonov's theorem: a product of a family of compact topological spaces $X=\prod_{p \in I} X_{p}$ is compact, the item a) is fulfilled. For all $x_{[-i]}$ the set $B r_{i}\left(x_{[-i]}\right)$ is non-empty because according to conditions 1) and 2) $\widetilde{H}_{i}$ is continuous and $X_{i}$ is compact (Weierstrass's theorem). According to condition 3) $B r_{i}\left(x_{[-i]}\right)$ is also convex because $\widetilde{H}_{i}$ is quasi-concave on $X_{i}$. Hence the set $B r(x)$ is nonempty convex and compact for all $x \in X$. The mapping $B r$ has a closed graph because each function $\widetilde{H}_{p}$ is continuous on $X$ for all $p \in I$. Hence by Kakutani's theorem, the set-valued mapping $B r$ has a fixed point. As we have noted, any fixed point is a Nash equilibrium.

## References

[1] Hancu Boris. Informational extended games generated by the one and double way directional informational flow. Studia Universitatis, Seria Ştiinţe exacte şi economice, No. 7(47), Chişinău, 2011, 32-43.
[2] Novac Ludmila. Nash equilibria in the noncooperative informational extended games. Bul. Acad. Ştiinţe Repub. Moldova, Mat., 2009, No. 1(59), 96-103.
[3] Kukushkin N. S., Morozov V. V. Teoria neantagonisticeskih igr. Moskva, MGU, 1984 (in Russian).
[4] Kakutani Shizuo. A generalization of Brouwer's fixed point theorem. Duke Mathematical Journal, 1941, No. 8(3), 457-459.

Boris Hâncu
State University of Moldova
60 Alexei Mateevici str., Chişinău, MD-2009
Moldova
E-mail: hancu@usm.md; boris.hancu@gmail.com

# Stability analysis of Pareto optimal portfolio of multicriteria investment maximin problem in the Hölder metric 

Vladimir Emelichev, Vladimir Korotkov


#### Abstract

We analyzed the stability of a Pareto-optimal portfolio of the multicriteria discrete variant of Markowitz's investment problem with Wald's maximin efficiency criteria. We obtained lower and upper bounds for the stability radius of such portfolio in the case of the Hölder metric $l_{p}, 1 \leq p \leq \infty$, in the three-dimensional space of problem parameters. We also show the attainability of bounds in particular cases. Mathematics subject classification: $90 \mathrm{C} 09,90 \mathrm{C} 29,90 \mathrm{C} 31,90 \mathrm{C} 47$. Keywords and phrases: Multicriteria optimization, investment portfolio, Wald's maximin efficiency criteria, Pareto-optimal portfolio, stability radius.


In paper [1] we obtained lower and upper attainable bounds for the stability radius of a Pareto-optimal portfolio of the multicriteria Boolean investment problem with Savage's minimax risk criteria in the case of the Chebyshev metric $l_{1}$ in the three-dimensional space of problem parameters. In the present paper we obtained the results of similar nature for the stability radius of the multicriteria investment problem with Wald's maximin efficiency criteria and any Hölder metric $l_{p}$, $1 \leq p \leq \infty$, in the spaces of criteria, portfolio and market states.

## 1 Problem statement and definitions

We consider the multicriteria discrete variant of Markowitz's investment managing problem [2]. To this end, we introduce the following notations:
$N_{n}=\{1,2, \ldots, n\}$ be a set of investment alternative projects (assets);
$N_{m}$ be a set of market states (conditions, scenarios);
$N_{s}$ be a set of project efficiency measures;
$x=\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)^{T} \in X \subseteq \mathbf{E}^{n}$ be an investment portfolio, where $|X| \geq 2$, $\mathbf{E}=\{0,1\}$,

$$
x_{j}= \begin{cases}1 & \text { if the project } j \text { is implemented }, \\ 0 & \text { otherwise } ;\end{cases}
$$

$e_{i j k}$ be an assessment of efficiency of measure $k \in N_{s}$ of investment project $j \in N_{n}$ in the situation when the market is in state $i \in N_{m}$;
$E=\left[e_{i j k}\right]$ be a three-dimensional $m \times n \times s$ matrix with elements from $\mathbf{R}$.
Note that there are several approaches to evaluate efficiency of investment projects (NPV, NFV, PI et al.), which take into account risk and uncertainty in

[^8]different ways (see e.g. [3-5]). That way it is worth to consider a decision making problem with multiple criteria (several measures of project efficiency).

Let the following vector objective function

$$
f(x, E)=\left(f_{1}\left(x, E_{1}\right), f_{2}\left(x, E_{2}\right), \ldots, f_{s}\left(x, E_{s}\right)\right),
$$

be given on a set of investment portfolios $X$ whose components are Wald's maximin criteria [6]

$$
f_{k}\left(x, E_{k}\right)=\min _{i \in N_{m}} E_{i k} x=\min _{i \in N_{m}} \sum_{j \in N_{n}} e_{i j k} x_{j} \rightarrow \max _{x \in X}, \quad k \in N_{s},
$$

where $E_{k} \in \mathbf{R}^{m \times n}$ is the $k$-th cut of matrix $E=\left[e_{i j k}\right] \in \mathbf{R}^{m \times n \times s}, E_{i k}=$ $\left(e_{i 1 k}, e_{i 2 k}, \ldots, e_{i n k}\right)$ is the $i$-th row of that cut. Thus, the investor, following Wald's criteria, takes extreme caution and optimizes portfolio efficiency $E_{i k} x$ (for the $k$-th criteria), assuming that the market was in the worst state, namely the efficiency is minimal. Obviously such pessimistic approach in the market state estimation is justified when we are talking about the guaranteed result.

A multicriteria investment Boolean problem $Z^{s}(E), s \in \mathbf{N}$, with Wald's criteria means the problem of searching the set of Pareto-optimal investment portfolios (the Pareto set)

$$
P^{s}(E)=\left\{x \in X: \nexists x^{\prime} \in X \quad\left(g\left(x^{\prime}, x, E\right) \geq 0_{(s)} \& g\left(x^{\prime}, x, E\right) \neq 0_{(s)}\right)\right\},
$$

where

$$
\begin{gathered}
g\left(x^{\prime}, x, E\right)=\left(g_{1}\left(x^{\prime}, x, E_{1}\right), g_{2}\left(x^{\prime}, x, E_{2}\right), \ldots, g_{s}\left(x^{\prime}, x, E_{s}\right)\right), \\
g_{k}\left(x^{\prime}, x, E_{k}\right)=f_{k}\left(x^{\prime}, E_{k}\right)-f_{k}\left(x, E_{k}\right)=\max _{i \in N_{m}} \min _{i^{\prime} \in N_{m}}\left(E_{i^{\prime} k} x^{\prime}-E_{i k} x\right), k \in N_{s}, \\
0_{(s)}=(0,0, \ldots, 0) \in \mathbf{R}^{s} .
\end{gathered}
$$

It is easy to see, in the particular case for $m=1$ our multicriteria investment problem $Z^{s}(E)$ becomes the multicriteria problem of linear Boolean programming

$$
\begin{equation*}
Z_{B}^{s}(E): \quad E x \rightarrow \max _{x \in X} \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $X \subseteq \mathbf{E}^{n}, E=\left[e_{1 j k}\right] \in \mathbf{R}^{1 \times n \times s}$ is the matrix with rows $E_{k}=\left(e_{11 k}, e_{12 k}, \ldots\right.$ $\left.\ldots, e_{1 n k}\right) \in \mathbf{R}^{n}, k \in N_{s}$. Such case can be interpreted as the situation when the investor has not got another alternative market state.

For any positive integer $d \geq 2$ in the real space $\mathbf{R}^{d}$ we introduce the Hölder metric $l_{p}, 1 \leq p \leq \infty$, where the norm of $a=\left(a_{1}, a_{2}, \ldots, a_{d}\right) \in \mathbf{R}^{d}$ is defined by the formula

$$
\|a\|_{p}= \begin{cases}\left(\sum_{j \in N_{d}}\left|a_{j}\right|^{p}\right)^{1 / p} & \text { if } 1 \leq p<\infty, \\ \max \left\{\left|a_{j}\right|: j \in N_{d}\right\} & \text { if } p=\infty,\end{cases}
$$

and by the norm of a matrix means the norm of the vector composed of all matrix elements. Hence for matrix $E \in \mathbf{R}^{m \times n \times s}$ and any metric $l_{p}, 1 \leq p \leq \infty$, we get the equalities

$$
\begin{gather*}
\|E\|_{p}=\left\|\left(\left\|E_{1}\right\|_{p},\left\|E_{2}\right\|_{p}, \ldots,\left\|E_{s}\right\|_{p}\right)\right\|_{p}  \tag{2}\\
\left\|E_{k}\right\|_{p}=\left\|\left(\left\|E_{1 k}\right\|_{p},\left\|E_{2 k}\right\|_{p}, \ldots,\left\|E_{m k}\right\|_{p}\right)\right\|_{p}, \quad k \in N_{s} \tag{3}
\end{gather*}
$$

Thus for $p<\infty$ the equations

$$
\begin{gather*}
\|E\|_{p}=\left(\sum_{k \in N_{s}}\left\|E_{k}\right\|_{p}^{p}\right)^{1 / p},  \tag{4}\\
\|z\|_{p}=\|z\|_{1}^{1 / p} \text { for } z \in\{-1,0,1\}^{n} \tag{5}
\end{gather*}
$$

hold. In addition, from (2) and (3) it follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|E_{i k}\right\|_{p} \leq\left\|E_{k}\right\|_{p} \leq\|E\|_{p}, \quad i \in N_{m}, k \in N_{s} \tag{6}
\end{equation*}
$$

It is known, that the metric $l_{p}$ defined in the space $\mathbf{R}^{d}$ includes the metric $l_{q}$ in the dual space $\left(\mathbf{R}^{d}\right)^{*}$, and $p, q$, as it is well known, are related by the formula

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{p}+\frac{1}{q}=1, \quad 1<p<\infty . \tag{7}
\end{equation*}
$$

In addition, as usual, we set $q=1$ if $p=\infty$ and $q=\infty$ if $p=1$. Thus, in what follows, we assume that the domain of variation of $p$ and $q$ is the interval $[1, \infty]$, while $p, q$ obey the above conditions, moreover, we assume $1 / p=0$ for $p=\infty$.

Using (6) and the Hölder inequality

$$
a b \leq\|a\|_{p}\|b\|_{q},
$$

where $a=\left(a_{1}, a_{2}, \ldots, a_{n}\right) \in \mathbf{R}^{n}, b=\left(b_{1}, b_{2}, \ldots, b_{n}\right)^{T} \in \mathbf{R}^{n}$, it is easy to see that for $x^{0}, x \in X$ and $1<p \leq \infty$ the following inequalities hold:

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{i^{\prime} k} x^{0}-E_{i k} x \geq-\left\|E_{k}\right\|_{p}\left(\left\|x^{0}\right\|_{q}+\|x\|_{q}\right), \quad i, \quad i^{\prime} \in N_{m}, \quad k \in N_{s} \tag{8}
\end{equation*}
$$

and for $p=1$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{i^{\prime} k} x^{0}-E_{i k} x \geq-\left\|E_{k}\right\|_{1}, \quad i, i^{\prime} \in N_{m}, \quad k \in N_{s} \tag{9}
\end{equation*}
$$

In addition, for any $p \in[1, \infty]$ the following equality is obvious:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|a\|_{p}=m^{1 / p} \alpha \tag{10}
\end{equation*}
$$

if any component of $a \in \mathbf{R}^{m}$ is the number $\alpha>0$.
As usual [1,7-9], the stability radius of the investment portfolio $x^{0} \in P^{s}(E)$ in the Hölder metric $l_{p}$ is defined as follows:

$$
\rho^{s}\left(x^{0}, p, m\right)= \begin{cases}\sup \Xi_{p} & \text { if } \Xi_{p} \neq \emptyset, \\ 0 & \text { if } \Xi_{p}=\emptyset,\end{cases}
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Xi_{p}= & \left\{\varepsilon>0: \forall E^{\prime} \in \Omega_{p}(\varepsilon) \quad\left(x^{0} \in P^{s}\left(E+E^{\prime}\right)\right)\right\}, \\
& \Omega_{p}(\varepsilon)=\left\{E^{\prime} \in \mathbf{R}^{m \times n \times s}:\left\|E^{\prime}\right\|_{p}<\varepsilon\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Here $\Omega(\varepsilon)$ is the set of perturbing matrixes, and $P^{s}\left(E+E^{\prime}\right)$ is the Pareto set of the perturbed problem $Z^{s}\left(E+E^{\prime}\right)$.

Thus, the stability radius defines an extreme level of problem initial data perturbations (elements of matrix $E$ ) preserving Pareto-optimality of the portfolio.

## 2 Lemmas

For the vector $a=\left(a_{1}, a_{2}, \ldots, a_{s}\right) \in \mathbf{R}^{s}$ we introduce the positive cutoff function:

$$
a^{+}=[a]^{+}=\left(a_{1}^{+}, a_{2}^{+}, \ldots, a_{s}^{+}\right),
$$

where $a_{k}^{+}=\left[a_{k}\right]^{+}=\max \left\{0, a_{k}\right\}, k \in N_{s}$.
Lemma 1. Let $\varphi_{1}>0, x^{0} \neq x$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|g^{+}\left(x^{0}, x, E\right)\right\|_{1} \geq \varphi_{1} \tag{11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\forall E^{\prime} \in \Omega_{1}\left(\varphi_{1}\right) \quad \exists l \in N_{s} \quad\left(g_{l}\left(x^{0}, x, E_{l}+E_{l}^{\prime}\right)>0\right) . \tag{12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Suppose, to the contrary, that there exists the perturbing matrix $E^{0} \in \Omega_{1}\left(\varphi_{1}\right)$ such that the inequalities

$$
\begin{equation*}
g_{k}\left(x^{0}, x, E_{k}+E_{k}^{0}\right) \leq 0, \quad k \in N_{s} \tag{13}
\end{equation*}
$$

hold.
Then, involving (9), we derive

$$
\begin{aligned}
0 \geq g_{k}\left(x^{0}, x, E_{k}+E_{k}^{0}\right) & =\max _{i \in N_{m}} \min _{i^{\prime} \in N_{m}}\left(E_{i^{\prime} k} x^{0}-E_{i k} x+E_{i^{\prime} k}^{0} x^{0}-E_{i k}^{0} x\right) \geq \\
& \geq g_{k}\left(x^{0}, x, E_{k}\right)-\left\|E_{k}^{0}\right\|_{1},
\end{aligned}
$$

i. e. $g_{k}^{+}\left(x^{0}, x, E_{k}\right) \leq\left\|E_{k}^{0}\right\|_{1}, k \in N_{s}$. Hence, taking into account $E^{0} \in \Omega_{1}\left(\varphi_{1}\right)$ it follows that the inequality

$$
\left\|g^{+}\left(x^{0}, x, E\right)\right\|_{1}=\sum_{k \in N_{s}} g_{k}^{+}\left(x^{0}, x, E_{k}\right) \leq \sum_{k \in N_{s}}\left\|E_{k}^{0}\right\|_{1}=\left\|E^{0}\right\|_{1}<\varphi_{1}
$$

holds.
This inequality contradicts the condition (11) of Lemma 1.
Lemma 2. Let $1<p \leq \infty, \varphi_{2}>0, x^{0} \neq x$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|g^{+}\left(x^{0}, x, E\right)\right\|_{p} \geq \varphi_{2}\left(\left\|x^{0}\right\|_{q}+\|x\|_{q}\right) \tag{14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\forall E^{\prime} \in \Omega_{p}\left(\varphi_{2}\right) \quad \exists l \in N_{s} \quad\left(g_{l}\left(x^{0}, x, E_{l}+E_{l}^{\prime}\right)>0\right) . \tag{15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. We again suppose, to the contrary, that there exists the perturbing matrix $E^{0} \in \Omega_{p}\left(\varphi_{2}\right)$ with the conditions (13) and for any index $k \in N_{s}$ in view of (8) we find

$$
\begin{gathered}
0 \geq g_{k}\left(x^{0}, x, E_{k}+E_{k}^{0}\right)=\max _{i \in N_{m}} \min _{i^{\prime} \in N_{m}}\left(E_{i^{\prime} k} x^{0}-E_{i k} x+E_{i^{\prime} k}^{0} x^{0}-E_{i k}^{0} x\right) \geq \\
\geq g_{k}\left(x^{0}, x, E_{k}\right)-\left\|E_{k}^{0}\right\|_{p}\left(\left\|x^{0}\right\|_{q}+\|x\|_{q}\right)
\end{gathered}
$$

i.e.

$$
g_{k}^{+}\left(x^{0}, x, E_{k}\right) \leq\left\|E_{k}^{0}\right\|_{p}\left(\left\|x^{0}\right\|_{q}+\|x\|_{q}\right), \quad k \in N_{s}
$$

Thus, taking into account (4) and $E^{0} \in \Omega_{p}\left(\varphi_{2}\right)$ for $p<\infty$ we have

$$
\begin{gathered}
\left\|g^{+}\left(x^{0}, x, E\right)\right\|_{p}=\left(\sum_{k \in N_{s}}\left(g_{k}^{+}\left(x^{0}, x, E_{k}\right)\right)^{p}\right)^{1 / p} \leq \\
\leq\left(\sum_{k \in N_{s}}\left\|E_{k}^{0}\right\|_{p}^{p}\right)^{1 / p}\left(\left\|x^{0}\right\|_{q}+\|x\|_{q}\right)=\left\|E^{0}\right\|_{p}\left(\left\|x^{0}\right\|_{q}+\|x\|_{q}\right)<\varphi_{2}\left(\left\|x^{0}\right\|_{q}+\|x\|_{q}\right)
\end{gathered}
$$

and for $p=\infty$ we derive

$$
\begin{gathered}
\left\|g^{+}\left(x^{0}, x, E\right)\right\|_{\infty}=\max _{k \in N_{s}} g_{k}^{+}\left(x^{0}, x, E_{k}\right) \leq \max _{k \in N_{s}}\left\|E_{k}^{0}\right\|_{\infty}\left(\left\|x^{0}\right\|_{1}+\|x\|_{1}\right)= \\
=\left\|E^{0}\right\|_{\infty}\left(\left\|x^{0}\right\|_{1}+\|x\|_{1}\right)<\varphi_{2}\left(\left\|x^{0}\right\|_{1}+\|x\|_{1}\right)
\end{gathered}
$$

This inequality is contrary to the condition (14).
By contradiction we can easily prove the following lemma.
Lemma 3. Let $x^{0} \in P^{s}(E), \gamma>0$ and $1 \leq p \leq \infty$. If for any portfolio $x \in X \backslash\left\{x^{0}\right\}$ and any perturbing matrix $E^{\prime} \in \Omega_{p}(\gamma)$ there exists $l \in N_{s}$ such that the inequality $g_{l}\left(x^{0}, x, E_{l}+E_{l}^{\prime}\right)>0$ is true, then the portfolio $x^{0}$ is a Pareto-optimal portfolio of the perturbing problem $Z^{s}\left(E+E^{\prime}\right)$, i.e. $x^{0} \in P^{s}\left(E+E^{\prime}\right)$ for $E^{\prime} \in \Omega_{p}(\gamma)$.

Lemma 4. Let $1 \leq p \leq \infty, x^{0} \neq x, \delta=\left(\delta_{1}, \delta_{2}, \ldots, \delta_{s}\right), \delta_{k}>0, k \in N_{s}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\delta_{k}\left\|x^{0}-x\right\|_{q}>g_{k}^{+}\left(x^{0}, x, E_{k}\right), \quad k \in N_{s} \tag{16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then for any number $\varepsilon>m^{1 / p}\|\delta\|_{p}$ there exists a matrix $E^{0} \in \Omega_{p}(\varepsilon)$ such that $x^{0} \notin P^{s}\left(E+E^{0}\right)$.

Proof. Using components of $\delta$ (see (16)), we define elements of the perturbing matrix $E^{0}=\left[e_{i j k}^{0}\right] \in \mathbf{R}^{m \times n \times s}$ as follows:

$$
e_{i j k}^{0}=\delta_{k} \frac{x_{j}-x_{j}^{0}}{\left\|x^{0}-x\right\|_{p}}, \quad i \in N_{m}, \quad j \in N_{n}, \quad k \in N_{s}
$$

Because all rows $E_{i k}^{0}, i \in N_{m}$, of the cut $E_{k}^{0} \in \mathbf{R}^{m \times n}$ are equal, then denoting such rows as $A_{k}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{k}=\delta_{k} \frac{\left(x-x^{0}\right)^{T}}{\left\|x^{0}-x\right\|_{p}}, \quad k \in N_{s} \tag{17}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus $\left\|E_{i k}^{0}\right\|_{p}=\left\|A_{k}\right\|_{p}=\delta_{k}, i \in N_{m}, k \in N_{s}$. Hence, according to (2), (3) and (10) we find

$$
\begin{gathered}
\left\|E_{k}^{0}\right\|_{p}=m^{1 / p} \delta_{k}, \quad k \in N_{s} \\
\left\|E^{0}\right\|_{p}=m^{1 / p}\|\delta\|_{p}
\end{gathered}
$$

and, therefore, $E^{0} \in \Omega_{p}(\varepsilon)$ for any $\varepsilon>m^{1 / p}\|\delta\|$. Here $1 / p=0$ is for $p=\infty$.
Further we prove that for any $p \in[1, \infty]$ and $k \in N_{s}$ the equality

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{k}\left(x^{0}-x\right)=-\delta_{k}\left\|x^{0}-x\right\|_{q} \tag{18}
\end{equation*}
$$

holds. Actually, for $p=\infty$ we have (in view of (17))

$$
A_{k}\left(x^{0}-x\right)=-\delta_{k}\left\|x^{0}-x\right\|_{1}, \quad k \in N_{s}
$$

and for $1 \leq p<\infty$, considering (5), (7) and (17), we get the following chain of equalities

$$
\begin{gathered}
A_{k}\left(x^{0}-x\right)=-\delta_{k} \frac{\left\|x^{0}-x\right\|_{1}}{\left\|x^{0}-x\right\|_{p}}= \\
=-\delta_{k} \frac{\left\|x^{0}-x\right\|_{1}}{\left\|x^{0}-x\right\|_{1}^{1 / p}}=-\delta_{k}\left\|x^{0}-x\right\|_{1}^{1 / q}=-\delta_{k}\left\|x^{0}-x\right\|_{q}, \quad k \in N_{s}
\end{gathered}
$$

At last, using (16) and (18), we conclude that for any index $k \in N_{s}$ the relations

$$
\begin{aligned}
& g_{k}\left(x^{0}, x, E_{k}+E_{k}^{0}\right)=\min _{i \in N_{m}}\left(E_{i k}+A_{k}\right) x^{0}-\min _{i \in N_{m}}\left(E_{i k}+A_{k}\right) x= \\
= & g_{k}\left(x^{0}, x, E_{k}\right)+A_{k}\left(x^{0}-x\right) \leq g_{k}^{+}\left(x^{0}, x, E_{k}\right)-\delta_{k}\left\|x^{0}-x\right\|_{q}<0
\end{aligned}
$$

hold.
Hence, $x^{0} \notin P^{s}\left(E+E^{0}\right)$.

## 3 Stability radius bounds

For a Pareto-optimal portfolio $x^{0}$ of the problem $Z^{s}(E)$ denote

$$
\begin{aligned}
\varphi_{1} & =\varphi_{1}\left(x^{0}, p, m\right)=\min _{x \in X \backslash\left\{x^{0}\right\}}\left\|g^{+}\left(x^{0}, x, E\right)\right\|_{p} \\
\varphi_{2} & =\varphi_{2}\left(x^{0}, p, m\right)=\min _{x \in X \backslash\left\{x^{0}\right\}} \frac{\left\|g^{+}\left(x^{0}, x, E\right)\right\|_{p}}{\left\|x^{0}\right\|_{q}+\|x\|_{q}} \\
\psi & =\psi\left(x^{0}, p, m\right)=\min _{x \in X \backslash\left\{x^{0}\right\}} \frac{\left\|g^{+}\left(x^{0}, x, E\right)\right\|_{p}}{\left\|x^{0}-x\right\|_{q}}
\end{aligned}
$$

Evidently, $\psi \geq 0, \varphi_{i} \geq 0, i \in N_{2}$, herewith $\varphi_{1}\left(x^{0}, 1, m\right)=\psi\left(x^{0}, 1, m\right)$ and $\varphi_{2}\left(x^{0}, p, m\right) \leq \psi\left(x^{0}, p, m\right)$ for $1<p \leq \infty$.

Theorem. For any $m, s \in \mathbf{N}$ and $1 \leq p \leq \infty$ the stability radius $\rho^{s}\left(x^{0}, p, m\right)$ of the investment portfolio $x^{0} \in P^{s}(E)$ in the Hölder metric $l_{p}$ has the following lower and upper bounds

$$
m^{1 / p} \psi\left(x^{0}, p, m\right) \geq \rho^{s}\left(x^{0}, p, m\right) \geq \begin{cases}\varphi_{1}\left(x^{0}, p, m\right), & \text { if } p=1,  \tag{19}\\ \varphi_{2}\left(x^{0}, p, m\right), & \text { if } 1<p \leq \infty .\end{cases}
$$

Proof. Let $x^{0} \in P^{s}(E)$. First we will prove the validity of lower bounds (19). Without loss of generality we assume that $\varphi_{i}>0, i \in N_{2}$ (otherwise, the inequalities $\rho \geq \varphi_{i}, i \in N_{2}$, are obvious). We shall consider separately the two possible cases.

Case 1: $p=1$. According to the definition of $\varphi_{1}=\varphi_{1}\left(x^{0}, 1, m\right)$ for any portfolio $x \neq x^{0}$ the inequality

$$
\left\|g^{+}\left(x^{0}, x, E\right)\right\|_{1} \geq \varphi_{1}
$$

holds. Therefore, due to Lemma 1 the formula (12) is valid. Then, according to Lemma 3 the portfolio $x^{0} \in P^{s}\left(E+E^{\prime}\right)$ for any perturbing matrix $E^{\prime} \in \Omega_{1}\left(\varphi_{1}\right)$. Thus, $\rho^{s}\left(x^{0}, 1, m\right) \geq \varphi_{1}\left(x^{0}, 1, m\right)$.

Case 2: $1<p \leq \infty$. According to the definition of $\varphi_{2}=\varphi_{2}\left(x^{0}, p, m\right)$ the inequalities hold

$$
\left\|g^{+}\left(x^{0}, x, E\right)\right\|_{p} \geq \varphi_{2}\left(\left\|x^{0}\right\|_{q}+\|x\|_{q}\right), \quad x \in X \backslash\left\{x^{0}\right\}
$$

Applying Lemma 2 yields the conclusion that for any portfolio $x \neq x^{0}$ the formula (15) holds. Hence from Lemma 3 it follows that the portfolio $x^{0} \in P^{s}\left(E+E^{\prime}\right)$ for $E^{\prime} \in \Omega_{p}\left(\varphi_{2}\right)$. Therefore, $\rho^{s}\left(x^{0}, p, m\right) \geq \varphi_{2}\left(x^{0}, p, m\right)$.

Further we will prove the validity of the upper bound (19) for any number $p \in$ $[1, \infty]$. Let $\varepsilon>m^{1 / p} \psi>0$, and a portfolio $x^{*} \neq x^{0}$ be such that

$$
\left\|g^{+}\left(x^{0}, x^{*}, E\right)\right\|_{p}=\psi\left\|x^{0}-x^{*}\right\|_{q} .
$$

Then, taking into account the continuous dependence of the norm of a vector on its coordinates we find a vector $\delta \in \mathbf{R}^{s}$ with positive components, which satisfy inequalities (16) shach that $\varepsilon / m^{1 / p}>\|\delta\|_{p}>\psi$. Hence, due to Lemma 4 there exists a perturbing matrix $E^{0} \in \Omega_{p}(\varepsilon)$ such that the portfolio $x^{0} \in P^{s}(E)$ is not a Paretooptimal portfolio of the perturbed problem $Z^{s}\left(E+E^{0}\right)$. Thus, we proved that for any number $\varepsilon>m^{1 / p} \psi$ the inequality $\rho^{s}\left(x^{0}, p, m\right)<\varepsilon$ holds, i.e. the inequality $\rho^{s}\left(x^{0}, p, m\right) \leq m^{1 / p} \psi\left(x^{0}, p, m\right)$ is true for any number $p \in[1, \infty]$.

## 4 Corollary

All of the following corollaries from Theorem are obvious and are valid for any number of criteria $s \in \mathbf{N}$.
Corollary 1. For any $m \in \mathbf{N}$ the following bounds are true:

$$
m \varphi_{1}\left(x^{0}, 1, m\right) \geq \rho^{s}\left(x^{0}, 1, m\right) \geq \varphi_{1}\left(x^{0}, 1, m\right) .
$$

Hence we get the following well-known result, which shows that lower and upper bounds (19) are attainable for $p=m=1$.
Corollary $2[\mathbf{7}, 10]$. The following formula holds:

$$
\rho^{s}\left(x^{0}, 1,1\right)=\varphi_{1}\left(x^{0}, 1,1\right)=\min _{x \in X \backslash\left\{x^{0}\right\}}\left\|\left[E\left(x^{0}-x\right)\right]^{+}\right\|_{1} .
$$

Corollary 3. For any $m \in \mathbf{N}$ the following bounds are true:

$$
\begin{align*}
\psi\left(x^{0}, \infty, m\right)= & \min _{x \in X \backslash\left\{x^{0}\right\}} \max _{k \in N_{s}} \max _{i \in N_{m}} \min _{i i^{\prime} \in N_{m}} \frac{E_{i^{\prime} k} x^{0}-E_{i k} x}{\left\|x^{0}-x\right\|_{1}} \geq \rho^{s}\left(x^{0}, \infty, m\right) \geq \\
& \geq \min _{x \in X \backslash\left\{x^{0}\right\}} \max _{k \in N_{s}} \max _{i \in N_{m}} \min _{i^{\prime} \in N_{m}} \frac{E_{i^{\prime} k} x^{0}-E_{i k} x}{\left\|x^{0}\right\|_{1}+\|x\|_{1}}=\varphi_{2}\left(x^{0}, \infty, m\right) . \tag{20}
\end{align*}
$$

In paper [1] we proved the attainability of such bounds for the stability radius of the Pareto-optimal portfolio of the multicriteria investment problem with Savage's minimax criteria in the metric $l_{\infty}$. Using the developed there techniques it is easy to prove, that lower and upper bounds (20), obtained here, are also attainable. In addition, the next statement follows from Corollary 3 and shows that lower and upper bound are attainable for $p=\infty$.
Corollary 4. If for any portfolio $x \in X \backslash\left\{x^{0}\right\}$ the inequality $\left\|x^{0}\right\|_{1}+\|x\|_{1}=\left\|x^{0}-x\right\|_{1}$ holds, then for index $m \in \mathbf{N}$ the following formula is true:

$$
\rho^{s}\left(x^{0}, \infty, m\right)=\varphi_{2}\left(x^{0}, \infty, m\right)=\psi\left(x^{0}, \infty, m\right) .
$$

Note that earlier in paper [7] (see also $[8,9]$ ) the formula of the stability radius of the Pareto-optimal solution $x^{0}$ of the multicriteria linear Boolean programming problem $Z_{B}^{s}(E)$ (see (1)) in the Hölder metric was obtained:

$$
\rho^{s}\left(x^{0}, p, 1\right)=\psi\left(x^{0}, p, 1\right)=\min _{x \in X \backslash\left\{x^{0}\right\}} \frac{\left\|\left[E\left(x^{0}-x\right)\right]^{+}\right\|_{p}}{\left\|x^{0}-x\right\|_{q}}, \quad 1 \leq p \leq \infty .
$$

This result shows that upper bound (19) is attainable in the linear case ( $m=1$ ). Corollary 5. For any parameters $m \in \mathbf{N}$ and $p \in[1, \infty]$ the stability radius $\rho^{s}\left(x^{0}, p, m\right)>0$ if and only if

$$
\min _{x \in X \backslash\left\{x^{0}\right\}} \max _{k \in N_{s}} g_{k}^{+}\left(x^{0}, x, E_{k}\right)>0 .
$$

Remark. Due to equivalence of any two metrics in finite dimensional linear spaces (see e.g. [11]), Corollary 5 is also valid not only for the Hölder metric $l_{p}$, but for another metrics in the space $\mathbf{R}^{m \times n \times s}$ of perturbing parameters of $Z^{s}(E)$.

This work was supported by the Republican Foundation of Fundamental Research of Belarus (the project F11K-095).

## References

[1] Emelichev V., Korotkov V., Kuzmin K. On stability of a Pareto-optimal solution of a portfolio optimization problem with Savage's minimax risk criteria. Bul. Acad. Ştiinţe Repub. Moldova, Mat., 2010, No. 3(64), 36-44.
[2] Markowitz H. M. Portfolio selection: efficient diversification of investments. Oxford, Blackwell, 1991.
[3] Salo A., Keisler J., Morton A. (eds.) Portfolio decision analysis: improved methods for resource allocation (International series in operations research and management science). New York, Springer, 2011.
[4] Bronshtein E. M., Kachkaeva M. M., Tulupova E. V. Control of investment portfolio based on complex quantile risk measures. Journal of Computer and System Sciences International, 2011, 50, No. 1, 174-180.
[5] Vilensky P. L., Livshiz V. N., Smolyk S. A. Evaluation of investment project effectiveness. Moscow, Theory and Practice, 2008 (in Russian).
[6] Wald A. Statistical decision functions. New York, Wiley, 1950.
[7] Emelichev V. A., Kuzmin K. G. Stability radius of an efficient solution of a vector problem of integer linear programming in the Gölder metric. Cybernetics and Systems Analysis, 2006, 42, No. 4, 609-614.
[8] Emelichev V. A., Kuz'min K. G. A general approach to studying the stability of a Pareto optimal solution of a vector integer linear programming problem. Discrete Math. Appl., 2007, 17, No. 4, 349-354.
[9] Emelichev V. A., Karelkina O. V. Finite cooperative games: parametrisation of the concept of equilibrium (from Pareto to Nash) and stability of the efficient situation in the Hölder metric. Discrete Math. Appl, 2009, 19, No. 3, 229-236.
[10] Emelichev V. A., Kuzmin K. G., Leonovich A. M. Stability in the combinatorial vector optimization problems. Automation and Remote Control, 2004, 65, No. 2, 227-240.
[11] Kolmogorov A. N., Fomin S. V. Elements of the theory of functions and functional analysis. New York, Dover, 1999.

Vladimir Emelichev, Vladimir Korotkov
Belarusian State University
av. Nezavisimosti, 4, 220030 Minsk
Belarus
E-mail: emelichev@bsu.by; wladko@tut.by

# Invariant transformations of loop transversals. 2. The case of isotopy 

Eugene Kuznetsov, Serghei Botnari


#### Abstract

The investigation of special transformations of loop transversals is continued. These transformations correspond to arbitrary isotopies of loop transversal operations (witch correspond to the considered loop transversals). Isotopies of loop transversal operations with the same unit are investigated.


Mathematics subject classification: 20N05.
Keywords and phrases: Quasigroup, loop, transversal, isomorphism, isotopy.

## 1 Introduction

This article is a continuation of the research of some special class of loop transversal transformations, begun in [5]. Transformations from the studied class correspond to arbitrary isotopies of transversal operations (which correspond to the considered loop transversals). We find a new class of loop transversal transformations which preserve the property to be a loop transversal. This investigation (as it was mentioned in [5]) is important for solving some other problems - for example, it can be used in the classification of $G$-loops.

## 2 Necessary definitions and statements

All necessary definitions and statements can be found in [5], §2. We remind the most important ones.

Definition 1. Let $G$ be a group and $H$ be its subgroup. Let $\left\{H_{i}\right\}_{i \in E}$ be the set of all left (right) cosets in $G$ to $H$, and we assume $H_{1}=H$. A set $T=\left\{t_{i}\right\}_{i \in E}$ of representativities of the left (right) cosets (by one from each coset $H_{i}$ and $t_{1}=e \in H$ ) is called a left (right) transversal in $G$ to $H$.

On any left transversal $T$ in a group $G$ to its subgroup $H$ it is possible to define the following operation (transversal operation) :

$$
x^{(T)} y=z \quad \stackrel{\text { def }}{\Longleftrightarrow} \quad t_{x} t_{y}=t_{z} h, \quad h \in H,
$$

Definition 2. If a system $\langle E, \stackrel{(T)}{ }, 1\rangle$ is a loop, then such left transversal $T=\left\{t_{x}\right\}_{x \in E}$ is called a loop transversal.

[^9]Further we are going to use the following permutation representation $\widehat{G}$ of a group $G$ by the left cosets of its subgroup $H$ (see [2,3]):

$$
\widehat{g}(x)=y \quad \stackrel{\text { def }}{\Longleftrightarrow} \quad g t_{x} H=t_{y} H
$$

For simplicity we assume that

$$
\operatorname{Core}_{G}(H)=\cap_{g \in G} g H g^{-1}=\{e\}
$$

then this representation is exact (see Lemma 6 in [3]), and we have $\widehat{G} \cong G$. Notice that $\widehat{H}=S t_{1}(\widehat{G})$.

Lemma 1 (see [3], Lemma 4). Let $T=\left\{t_{x}\right\}_{x \in E}$ be a left transversal in $G$ to $H$. Then the following statements are true:

1. $\widehat{h}(1)=1 \forall h \epsilon H$;
2. $\forall x, y \in E:$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \widehat{t}_{x}(y)=x^{(T)} y=\widehat{L}_{x}(y), \quad \widehat{t}_{1}(x)=\widehat{t}_{x}(1)=x, \\
& \widehat{t}_{x}^{-1}(y)=x \backslash^{(T)} y=\widehat{L}_{x}^{-1}(y), \quad \widehat{t}_{x}^{-1}(1)=x \backslash^{(T)} 1, \quad \widehat{t}_{x}^{-1}(x)=1,
\end{aligned}
$$

where " $\backslash^{(T)}$ " is a left division for the operation $\langle E, \stackrel{(T)}{ }, 1\rangle$ (i.e. $x \backslash^{(T)} y=z \Longleftrightarrow$ $\left.x^{(T)}{ }^{(T)} z=y\right)$.

Lemma 2 (see [3], Lemma 7). Let $T=\left\{t_{x}\right\}_{x \in E}$ and $P=\left\{p_{x}\right\}_{x \in E}$ be left transversals in $G$ to $H$. Then there is a set of elements $\left\{h_{(x)}\right\}_{x \in E}$ from $H$ such that:

1. $p_{x}=t_{x} h_{(x)} \forall x \in E$;
2. $x{ }^{(P)} y=x{ }^{(T)} \hat{h}_{(x)}(y)$.

This set $\left\{h_{(x)}\right\}_{x \in E}$ is called (see [4]) a derivation set for the transversal $T$ (and for the transversal operation $\left.\left\langle E,{ }^{(T)}, 1\right\rangle\right)$.

Definition 3 (see [1]). A triple of permutations $\Phi=(\alpha, \beta, \gamma) \quad(\alpha, \beta, \gamma$ are permutations on a set $E$ ) is called an isotopy of the operation $\langle E, \cdot\rangle$ on the operation $\langle E, \circ\rangle$ if

$$
\gamma(x \circ y)=\alpha(x) \cdot \beta(y) \quad \forall x, y \in E
$$

If $\Phi=(\gamma, \gamma, \gamma)$, then such an isotopy is called an isomorphism. If $\Phi=(\alpha, \beta, i d)$, then such an isotopy is called a principal isotopy.

According to Lemma 1.2 from [1] we have

Lemma 3. If a loop $\left\langle E, \cdot, e_{1}\right\rangle$ is isotopic to a loop $\left\langle E, \circ, e_{2}\right\rangle$, then it is isomorphic to some principal isotope of a loop $\langle E, \circ\rangle$ (and this principal isotopy has the form $\left.T_{0}=\left(R_{b}^{-1}, L_{a}^{-1}, i d\right), a \cdot b=e_{2}\right)$.
Remark 1. If a loop $\langle E, \cdot, 1\rangle$ is principally isotopic to a loop $\langle E, \circ, 1\rangle$, then this principal isotopy has the form $T_{0}=\left(R_{a \backslash 1}^{-1}, L_{a}^{-1}, i d\right)$ for some $a \in E\left(a^{-1}=a \backslash 1\right.$ is the right inverse element to $a$ in the loop $\langle E, \cdot, 1\rangle$ ).

## 3 Transformations of loop transversals which correspond to an isotopy of their transversal operations

Let $T=\left\{t_{x}\right\}_{x \in E}$ and $P=\left\{p_{x}\right\}_{x \in E}$ be two loop transversals in a group $G$ to its subgroup $H$, and $\left\langle E,{ }^{(T)}, 1\right\rangle,\langle E, \stackrel{(P)}{ }, 1\rangle$ be their transversal operations. Fix one of these loop transversals, for example $T=\left\{t_{x}\right\}_{x \in E}$.

As follows from Lemma 3, to investigate loop transversals transformations which correspond to an isotopy of operations $\langle E, \stackrel{(T)}{\bullet}, 1\rangle$ and $\langle E, \stackrel{(P)}{\bullet}, 1\rangle$ it is enough to study the case of principal isotopy $T_{0}=\left(R_{a \backslash 1}^{-1}, L_{a}^{-1}, i d\right)$ (because the transformations which corresponds to an isomorphism of transversal operations were studied earlier in [5]).
Theorem 1. Let loops $\left\langle E, \stackrel{(T)}{\left.{ }^{( }\right)}, 1\right\rangle$ and $\left\langle E, \stackrel{P}{P}^{(P)}, 1\right\rangle$ be principally isotopic and this principal isotopy has the form $T_{0}=\left(R_{b}^{-1}, L_{a}^{-1}, i d\right)$ for some $a \in E$ (note that $a, b \in E$, $\left.a^{(T)} \cdot b=1\right)$. Then

$$
\widehat{P}=\widehat{T} \cdot \widehat{t}_{a}^{-1} .
$$

Proof. Let the conditions of Theorem hold. Then

$$
x \stackrel{(P)}{\cdot} y=R_{b}^{-1}(x) \stackrel{(T)}{\cdot} L_{a}^{-1}(y)
$$

for some $a, b \in E, a{ }^{(T)} b=1$, and $L_{a}, R_{b}$ are left and right translations in the loop $\left\langle E,{ }^{(T)}, 1\right\rangle$. Then the left translation $\mathbf{L}_{x}$ in the loop $\left\langle E \stackrel{(P)}{\left.{ }^{( }\right)}, 1\right\rangle$ has the form:

$$
\mathbf{L}_{x}(y)=x \stackrel{(P)}{\cdot} y=R_{b}^{-1}(x) \stackrel{(T)}{\cdot} L_{a}^{-1}(y)=L_{R_{b}^{-1}(x)} L_{a}^{-1}(y), \quad \forall x, y \in E,
$$

that is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{L}_{x}=L_{R_{b}^{-1}(x)} L_{a}^{-1} \quad \forall x \in E \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

By Lemma 1 (item 2) we have

$$
\left\{\mathbf{L}_{x}\right\}_{x \in E} \equiv\left\{\widehat{p}_{x}\right\}_{x \in E}=\widehat{P}
$$

and

$$
\left\{L_{x}\right\}_{x \in E} \equiv\left\{\widehat{t}_{x}\right\}_{x \in E}=\widehat{T}
$$

Since $R_{b}^{-1}$ is a permutation on the set $E$ for every $b \in E$, then it follows from (1): $\widehat{P}=\widehat{T} \cdot \widehat{t}_{a}^{-1}$ for some $a \in E$.

Lemma 4. Let loops $\langle E, \stackrel{(T)}{\cdot}, 1\rangle$ and $\langle E, \stackrel{(P)}{\cdot}, 1\rangle$ be isotopic. Then the following statement holds:

$$
\widehat{P}=\widehat{h}_{0} \widehat{T} \widehat{t}_{a}^{-1} \widehat{h}_{0}^{-1}
$$

for some $h_{0} \in \widehat{H}$ and some $a \in E$.
Proof. Let loops $\left\langle E,{ }^{(T)}, 1\right\rangle$ and $\left\langle E,{ }^{(P)}, 1\right\rangle$ be isotopic. Then according to Lemma 3, their isotopy can be represented in the form of composition of a principal isotopy and an isomorphism:

$$
(\alpha, \beta, \gamma)=\left(R_{b}^{-1}, L_{a}^{-1}, i d\right) \circ(\gamma, \gamma, \gamma)
$$

where $\gamma(1)=1, \quad a^{(T)} b=1$. Now our statement is a simple corollary from Theorem 1 and Lemma 7 of [5].

Theorem 2. Let $T=\left\{t_{x}\right\}_{x \in E}$ be a fixed loop transversal in $G$ to $H$, and $a \in E$ be an arbitrary element of the set $E$. Define the following set $P=\left\{p_{x^{\prime}}\right\}_{x^{\prime} \in E}$ of permutations:

$$
\widehat{p}_{x^{\prime}} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \widehat{t}_{x} \widehat{t}_{a}^{-1} \quad \forall x \in E
$$

Then

1. $P=\left\{p_{x^{\prime}}\right\}_{x^{\prime} \in E}$ is a left transversal in $G$ to $H$;
2. A transversal operation $\left\langle E,{ }^{(P)}, 1\right\rangle$ is principally isotopic to the operation $\left\langle E,{ }^{(T)}, 1\right\rangle$, and the principal isotopy $S$ has the following form: $S=\left(R_{a \backslash 1}^{-1}, L_{a}^{-1}, i d\right) ;$
3. $P$ is a loop transversal in $G$ to $H$.

Proof. 1. We have

$$
x^{\prime}=\widehat{p}_{x^{\prime}}(1)=\widehat{t}_{x} \widehat{t}_{a}^{-1}(1)=\widehat{t}_{x}(a \backslash 1)=x{ }^{(T)}(a \backslash 1)=R_{a \backslash 1}(x)
$$

Since $\left\langle E,{ }^{(T)}, 1\right\rangle$ is a loop, then $R_{a \backslash 1}$ is a permutation on the set $E$ for every $a \in E$. Therefore the element $x^{\prime}$ runs over all the set $E$. So there is at least one element of $P$ (element $p_{x^{\prime}}$ ) in each left coset $H_{x^{\prime}}$. It means that $P$ is a left transversal in $G$ to $H$. Moreover, $e=t_{a} t_{a}^{-1} \in P$.
2. Let us study the following set of elements:

$$
\widehat{p}_{x^{\prime}}=\widehat{t}_{x} \widehat{t}_{a}^{-1}, \quad x \in E
$$

where $a$ is an arbitrary fixed element of the set $E$. As we have seen,

$$
\begin{equation*}
x^{\prime}=x^{(T)}\left(a \backslash^{(T)} 1\right) \tag{2}
\end{equation*}
$$

For the transversal operation $\left\langle E, \stackrel{(P)}{{ }^{\prime}}, 1\right\rangle$ we have (by the definition):

$$
p_{x^{\prime}} p_{y^{\prime}}=p_{x^{\prime}(P) y^{\prime}} h^{*}, \quad h^{*} \in H .
$$

Then by Lemma 1 and the definition of transversal operation we have

$$
\begin{align*}
x^{\prime} \stackrel{(P)}{\cdot} y^{\prime} & =\widehat{p}_{x^{\prime}}(P) y^{\prime} \widehat{h}^{*}(1)=\widehat{p}_{x^{\prime}} \widehat{p}_{y^{\prime}}(1)= \\
& \left.=\widehat{t}_{x} \widehat{t}_{a}^{-1} \widehat{t}_{y} \widehat{t}_{a}^{-1}(1)=x \stackrel{(T)}{ }\left[a{ }^{(T)}\left(y^{(T)}(a)^{(T)} 1\right)\right)\right] . \tag{3}
\end{align*}
$$

Using (2) in (3), we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[x \cdot\left({ }^{(T)}\left(a{ }^{(T)} 1\right)\right] \stackrel{(P)}{\cdot}\left[y{ }^{(T)}\left(a{ }^{(T)} 1\right)\right]=x^{(T)} \cdot\left[a{ }^{(T)}\left(y^{(T)}\left(a{ }^{(T)} 1\right)\right)\right] .\right. \tag{4}
\end{equation*}
$$

We replace:

$$
\left\{\begin{array} { l } 
{ x = u ^ { ( T ) } / ( a \backslash ^ { ( T ) } 1 ) } \\
{ y = v / ( a ) ^ { ( T ) } 1 ) }
\end{array} \Longleftrightarrow \left\{\begin{array}{l}
u=x^{(T)}\left(a{ }^{(T)} 1\right)=R_{a \backslash 1}(x) \\
v=y^{(T)}\left(a \backslash^{(T)} 1\right)=R_{a \backslash 1}(y) .
\end{array}\right.\right.
$$

Since $R_{a \backslash 1}$ is a permutation for every $a \in E$ in the loop $\left\langle E,{ }^{(T)}, 1\right\rangle$, then $u$ and $v$ run over all the set $E$. Then we have from (4):

$$
\begin{aligned}
u^{(P)} v & =\left(u^{(T)} /(a \backslash 1)\right) \\
& =\left(u^{(T)}\left[a{ }^{(T)}(a \backslash 1)\right)\right. \\
& \left.\stackrel{(T)}{(T)}\left(\left(v^{(T)} /(a \backslash 1)\right) \stackrel{(T)}{\cdot}(a \backslash 1)\right)\right]= \\
& (a)=R_{a \backslash 1}^{-1}(u) \stackrel{(T)}{\cdot} L_{a}^{-1}(v) .
\end{aligned}
$$

From the last equality it follows that the operation $\left\langle E,{ }^{(P)}, 1\right\rangle$ is principally isotopic
 $\left(R_{a \backslash 1}^{-1}, L_{a}^{-1}, i d\right)$.
3. According to item 2 the operation $\left\langle E,{ }^{(P)}, 1\right\rangle$ is a principal isotope of the loop operation $\langle E, \stackrel{(T)}{ }, 1\rangle$, and this principal isotopy has the form $S=\left(R_{a \backslash 1}^{-1}, L_{a}^{-1}, i d\right)$. It is well known that any isotope of a loop is a quasigroup, so the operation $\langle E \stackrel{(P)}{\stackrel{ }{( }, 1\rangle}$ is a quasigroup. Moreover, the element 1 is a unit element of this quasigroup, that is the operation $\left\langle E,{ }^{(P)}, 1\right\rangle$ is a loop. It means that the transversal $P=\left\{p_{x}\right\}_{x \in E}$ is a loop transversal.

Lemma 5. Let $T=\left\{t_{x}\right\}_{x \in E}$ and $P=\left\{p_{x}\right\}_{x \in E}$ be two transversals in $G$ to $H$ which correspond to principally isotopic transversal operations. Let $p_{x}=t_{x} h_{(x)}$ and $\left\{h_{(x)}\right\}_{x \in E}$ be a derivation set. Then

$$
h_{(x)}=t_{x}^{-1} t_{x /(a \backslash 1)}^{(T)} t_{a}^{-1}
$$

for some $a \in E$.
Proof. According to Theorem 2 (item 2) we have for every $x \in E$ :

$$
\widehat{p}_{x{ }^{(T)}(a \backslash 1)}=\widehat{t}_{x} \hat{t}_{a}^{-1}
$$

for some element $a \in E$. Let us replace $u=x^{(T)}(a \backslash 1)$, so $x=u^{(T)}(a \backslash 1)$. Then

$$
p_{u}=t_{\substack{(T)(a \backslash 1)}} t_{a}^{-1}, \quad \forall u \in E
$$

On the other hand,

$$
p_{u}=t_{u} h_{(u)}, \quad \forall u \in E
$$

So

$$
t_{u} h_{(u)}=t_{u /(a \backslash 1)} t_{a}^{-1}
$$

and our Lemma is proved.
Lemma 6. Let $T=\left\{t_{x}\right\}_{x \in E}$ be a fixed loop transversal in $G$ to $H$, and $a \in E$ be some element of the set $E$. Define the following set $S=\left\{s_{x^{\prime}}\right\}_{x^{\prime} \in E}$ of elements:

$$
s_{x^{\prime}} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} t_{a} t_{x} t_{a}^{-1} \quad \forall x \in E
$$

Then:

1. $S=\left\{s_{x^{\prime}}\right\}_{x^{\prime} \in E}$ is a left transversal in $G$ to $H$;
2. A transversal operation $\left\langle E,{ }^{(S)}, 1\right\rangle$ is isotopic to the operation $\left\langle E,{ }^{(T)}, 1\right\rangle$, and the isotopy $S$ has the following form: $\quad S=\left(\beta \alpha, \alpha, \beta^{-1}\right)$, where $\alpha=L_{a}^{-1}$, $\beta=R_{a \backslash 1}^{-1} ;$
3. $S$ is a loop transversal in $G$ to $H$.

Proof. 1. We have:

$$
x^{\prime}=\widehat{s}_{x^{\prime}}(1)=\widehat{t}_{a} \hat{t}_{x} \widehat{t}_{a}^{-1}(1)=\widehat{t}_{a} \hat{t}_{x}(a \backslash 1)=a^{(T)}\left(x^{(T)}(a \backslash 1)\right)=L_{a} R_{a \backslash 1}(x)
$$

Since $\left\langle E,{ }^{(T)}, 1\right\rangle$ is a loop, then $L_{a}$ and $R_{a \backslash 1}$ are permutations on the set $E$ for every $a \in E$. Therefore an element $x^{\prime}$ runs over all the set $E$. So every left coset $H_{x^{\prime}}$
contains an element of $S$ (element $s_{x^{\prime}}$ ). So $S=\left\{s_{x^{\prime}}\right\}_{x^{\prime} \in E}$ is a left transversal in $G$ to $H$. Moreover, $e=t_{a} e t_{a}^{-1}=t_{a} t_{1} t_{a}^{-1} \in E$.
2. Let us examine the following set of elements

$$
s_{x^{\prime}}=t_{a} t_{x} t_{a}^{-1}, \quad x \in E
$$

where $a$ is an element of the set $E$. As we have seen,

$$
\begin{equation*}
x^{\prime}=a^{(T)}\left(x^{(T)}(a \backslash 1)\right) \tag{5}
\end{equation*}
$$

For the transversal operation $\langle E, \stackrel{(S)}{\cdot}, 1\rangle$ we have

$$
s_{x^{\prime}} s_{y^{\prime}}=s_{x^{\prime}(S)} y_{y^{\prime}} h^{*}, \quad h^{*} \in H
$$

Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
x^{\prime} \stackrel{(S)}{\cdot} y^{\prime} & =\widehat{s}_{x^{\prime}(S) \cdot y^{\prime}} \widehat{h}^{*}(1)=\widehat{s}_{x^{\prime}} \widehat{s}_{y^{\prime}}(1)=\left(\widehat{t}_{a} \widehat{t}_{x} \widehat{t}_{a}^{-1}\right)\left(\widehat{t}_{a} \widehat{t}_{y} \widehat{t}_{a}^{-1}\right)(1)= \\
& =\widehat{t}_{a} \widehat{t}_{x} \widehat{t}_{y} \widehat{t}_{a}^{-1}(1)=\widehat{t}_{a} \widehat{t}_{x} \widehat{t}_{y}(a \backslash 1)=a^{(T)}\left(x^{(T)}\left(y^{(T)}(a \backslash 1)\right)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

By (5) from the last equality we obtain:

$$
\begin{equation*}
[a \stackrel{(T)}{\cdot}(x \stackrel{(T)}{\cdot}(a \backslash 1))] \stackrel{(S)}{\cdot}[a \stackrel{(T)}{\cdot}(y \stackrel{(T)}{\cdot}(a \backslash 1))]=a^{(T)}\left(x^{(T)}\left(y^{(T)}(a \backslash 1)\right)\right) \tag{6}
\end{equation*}
$$

We replace:

$$
\left\{\begin{array} { l } 
{ a ^ { ( T ) } ( x \stackrel { ( T ) } { \cdot } ( a \backslash 1 ) ) = u } \\
{ a ^ { ( T ) } ( y \stackrel { ( T ) } { \cdot } ( a \backslash 1 ) ) = v }
\end{array} \Longleftrightarrow \left\{\begin{array} { l } 
{ x = ( a \backslash u ) / ( a \backslash 1 ) } \\
{ y = ( a \backslash v ) / ( a \backslash 1 ) }
\end{array} \Longleftrightarrow \left\{\begin{array}{l}
u=L_{a} R_{a \backslash 1}(x) \\
v=L_{a} R_{a \backslash 1}(y)
\end{array}\right.\right.\right.
$$

that is the elements $u, v$ run over all the set $E$. Then from (6) we obtain:

$$
\begin{aligned}
u^{(S)} \cdot v & =a^{(T)} \cdot[((a \backslash u) /(a \backslash 1)) \stackrel{(T)}{\cdot}[((a \backslash v) /(a \backslash 1)) \stackrel{(T)}{\cdot}(a \backslash 1)]]= \\
& =a^{(T)} \cdot[((a \backslash u) /(a \backslash 1)) \stackrel{(T)}{(T)}(a \backslash v)]=L_{a}\left[\left(R_{a \backslash 1}^{-1} L_{a}^{-1}(u)\right){ }^{(T)}\left(L_{a}^{-1}(v)\right)\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
L_{a}^{-1}(u \stackrel{(S)}{\cdot} v)=R_{a \backslash 1}^{-1} L_{a}^{-1}(u) \stackrel{(T)}{\cdot} L_{a}^{-1}(v) \tag{7}
\end{equation*}
$$

It means that the operations $\left\langle E,{ }^{(S)}, 1\right\rangle$ and $\left\langle E,{ }^{(T)}, 1\right\rangle$ are isotopic and the isotopy $S$ has the form $S=(\beta \alpha, \alpha, \alpha)$, where $\alpha=L_{a}^{-1}, \beta=R_{a \backslash 1}^{-1}$.
3. By item 2 the operation $\left\langle E,{ }^{(S)}, 1\right\rangle$ is an isotope of the loop operation and this isotopy has the form $S=(\beta \alpha, \alpha, \alpha)$, where $\alpha=L_{a}^{-1}, \beta=R_{a \backslash 1}^{-1}$. It is well known
that any isotope of a loop is a quasigroup, so the operation $\langle E, \stackrel{(S)}{\cdot}, 1\rangle$ is a quasigroup. Moreover,

$$
s_{1^{\prime}}=t_{a} t_{1} t_{a}^{-1}=t_{a} \cdot e \cdot t_{a}^{-1}=e=t_{1}
$$

that is the element 1 is a unit element of this quasigroup. So the operation $\left\langle E,{ }^{(S)}, 1\right\rangle$ is a loop and $S^{\prime}=\left\{s_{x}\right\}_{x \in E}$ is a loop transversal.

Lemma 7. Let $T=\left\{t_{x}\right\}_{x \in E}$ be a fixed loop transversal in $G$ to $H$ and $a \in E$ be an arbitrary element in $E$. Define the following set $M=\left\{m_{x^{\prime}}\right\}_{x^{\prime} \in E}$ of elements:

$$
m_{x^{\prime}} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} t_{a}^{-1} t_{x}, \quad \forall x \in E
$$

Then:

1. $M=\left\{m_{x^{\prime}}\right\}_{x^{\prime} \in E}$ is a left transversal in $G$ to $H$.
2. The transversal operation $\left\langle E,{ }^{(M)}, 1\right\rangle$ is isotopic to the operation $\left\langle E,{ }^{(T)}, 1\right\rangle$ and the isotopy $Q$ has the following form: $Q=\left(L_{a}, i d, L_{a}\right)$.
3. $M$ is a loop transversal in $G$ to $H$.

Proof. 1. We have

$$
\begin{equation*}
x^{\prime}=\widehat{m}_{x^{\prime}}(1)=\widehat{t}_{a}^{-1} \widehat{t}_{x}(1)=a \backslash x=L_{a}^{-1}(x) \tag{8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\left\langle E,{ }^{(T)}, 1\right\rangle$ is a loop then $L_{a}^{-1}$ is a permutation on the set $E \quad$ for every $a \in E$. So the element $x^{\prime}$ runs over all the set $E$, and $M$ is a loop transversal in $G$ to $H$.
2. Let us examine the following set of elements:

$$
m_{x^{\prime}} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} t_{a}^{-1} t_{x}, \quad x \in E
$$

where $a$ is some element in $E$. As we have seen above, $\quad x^{\prime}=a \backslash x$. For the


$$
m_{x^{\prime}} m_{y^{\prime}}=m_{x^{\prime} \cdot Y^{\prime}} h^{*}, \quad h^{*} \in H .
$$

Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
x^{\prime(M)} y^{\prime} & =\widehat{m}{ }_{x^{\prime}(M)}{ }^{(M)} \widehat{h}^{*}(1)=\widehat{m}_{x^{\prime}} \widehat{m}_{y^{\prime}}(1)=\left(\widehat{t}_{a}^{-1} \widehat{t}_{x}\right)\left(\widehat{t}_{a}^{-1} \widehat{t}_{y}\right)(1)= \\
& =\widehat{t}_{a}^{-1} \hat{t}_{x}(a \backslash y)=a \backslash\left[x^{(T)}(a \backslash y)\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

By (8) we obtain:

$$
\begin{equation*}
(a \backslash x)^{(M)}(a \backslash y)=a \backslash\left[x^{(T)}(a \backslash y)\right] \tag{9}
\end{equation*}
$$

We use the change of variables:

$$
\left\{\begin{array} { l } 
{ a \backslash x = u } \\
{ a \backslash y = v }
\end{array} \Longleftrightarrow \left\{\begin{array} { l } 
{ x = a ^ { ( T ) } u } \\
{ y = a ^ { ( T ) } v }
\end{array} \Longleftrightarrow \left\{\begin{array}{l}
u=L_{a}^{-1}(x) \\
v=L_{a}^{-1}(y)
\end{array}\right.\right.\right.
$$

So elements $u, v$ run over all the set $E$. Then we have

$$
u^{(M)} v=a \backslash\left[\left(a^{(T)} u\right)^{(T)}\left(a \backslash\left(a^{(T)} v\right)\right)\right]=a \backslash\left[\left(a^{(T)} u\right)^{(T)} v\right]
$$

that is

$$
L_{a}(u \stackrel{(M)}{\cdot} v)=L_{a}(u) \stackrel{(T)}{\cdot} v
$$

It is an isotopy of the type $\left(L_{a}, i d, L_{a}\right)$.
3. Similar to the item 3 of Lemma 5 and Lemma 6.

## References

[1] Belousov V. Foundations of quasigroup and loop theory. Nauka, Moscow, 1967 (in Russian).
[2] Hall M. Group theory. IL, Moscow, 1962 (in Russian).
[3] Kuznetsov E. Transversals in groups. 1. Elementary properties. Quasigroups and related systems, 1994, 1, No. 1, 22-42.
[4] Kuznetsov E. Transversals in groups. 4. Derivation construction. Quasigroups and related systems, 2002, 9, 67-84.
[5] Kuznetsov E., Botnari S. Invariant transformations of loop transversals. 1. The case of isomorphism. Bul. Acad. Ştiinţe Repub. Moldova, Mat., 2010, No. 1(62), 65-76.


[^0]:    (c) Jing Du, Chuangxia Huang, Lanzhe Liu, 2012

[^1]:    (c) N. I. Sandu, 2012

[^2]:    N. I. SANDU

    Received April 6, 2011
    Tiraspol State University
    str. Iablochkin, 5, Chisinau, MD-2069
    Moldova
    E-mail: sandumn@yahoo.com

[^3]:    (c) Virginia Atanasiu, 2012

[^4]:    (c) V.I. Arnautov, 2012

[^5]:    ${ }^{1}$ As usual, the set $V$ is called a neighborhood of an element $a$ in the topological space $(X, \tau)$ if $a \in U \subseteq V$ for some $U \in \tau$.

[^6]:    ${ }^{2}$ i.e. $\mathbb{N} \backslash\{1, \ldots, k\} \in \mathcal{F}$ for every $k \in \mathbb{N}$.

[^7]:    © Rory Biggs, Claudiu C. Remsing, 2012

[^8]:    © Vladimir Emelichev, Vladimir Korotkov, 2012

[^9]:    © Eugene Kuznetsov, Serghei Botnari, 2012

